

# CHURCH HISTORY MANUAL

By Dr. Peter Hammond



Chapter	CONTENTS	Page
1	An Overview of Church History - Timeline	1
7	The Twelve Apostles	7
3	Perpetua – Courageous Christian Martyr	9
4	Patrick of Ireland	11
5	Columba – Missionary to Scotland	13
6	Boniface – Apostle to the Germans	15
7	The Venerable Bede – Father of English History	17
8	King Alfred the Great – The Reformer King	19
9	How the Vikings Were Won to Christ	23
10	The Crusades vs. Jihad	29
11	What Every Christian Needs to Know About the Inquisition	35
12	Magna Carta	37
13	The Greatest Century of Reformation	41
14	The Great Siege of Malta	51
15	The Battle of Lepanto	59
16	The Spanish Armada	61
17	Slavery – What You’ve Never Been Told	65
18	The French Revolution	73
19	The Battle of Waterloo	79
20	Making Disciples of All Nations	85
21	Samual Ajai Crowther	91
22	The Causes and Catastrophic Consequences of the First World War	93
23	The Christmas Truce	97
24	Guilt Manipulation vs. Real Repentance	101
25	The Bolshevik Revolution	107
26	The Iron Curtain and the Cold War	111
27	How the New World Order is Hijacking Civilisation	115
28	Resisting Babylon and the Beast	123
29	Hollywood, History and Humanism	127
30	The End of Islam	131
31	How the Greatest Century of Mission Was Derailed into the Worst Century of Persecution	137
	Appendix - Recommended History Films	140



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org

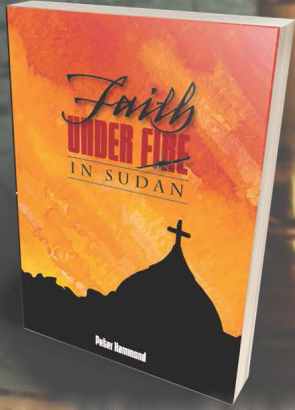




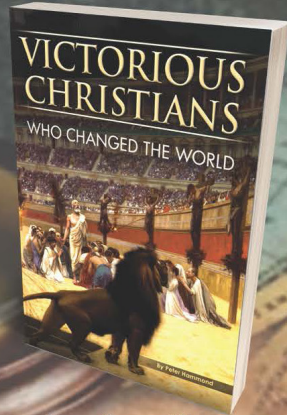
# HISTORY BOOK BUNDLE

UNDERSTAND THE TIMES. LEARN FROM EXAMPLES OF EXCELLENCE

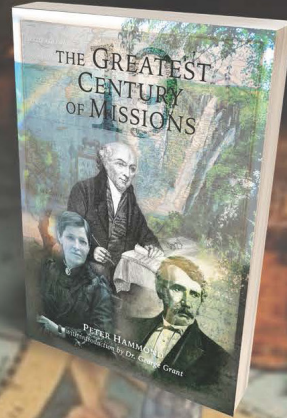
*“Now these things became our examples, to the intent that we should not lust after evil things as they also lusted... Now all these things happened to them as examples and they were written for our admonition...” 1 Corinthians 10:6-11*



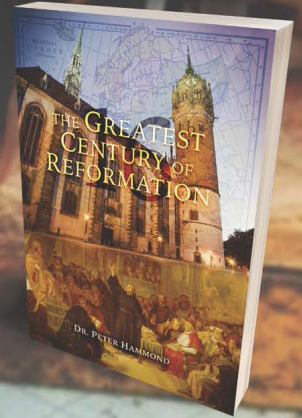
This book takes you behind the lines of one of the longest wars of recent years and introduces you to the unforgettable Christian heroes of this colossal conflict. 320 Pages & 205 pictures. **R105\***



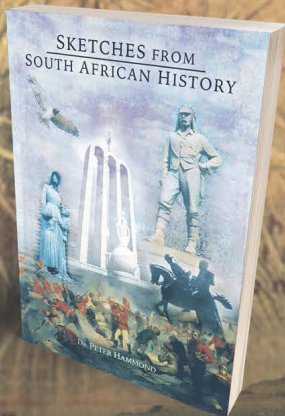
Examples of excellence provided by some of the most colourful and effective Christians in history. 380 Pages & over 250 pictures. **R135\***



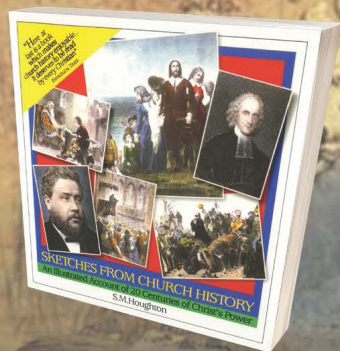
A treasure trove of achievements during the most momentous era of Christian advance. 224 Pages with over 190 pictures, photographs, & maps **R98\***



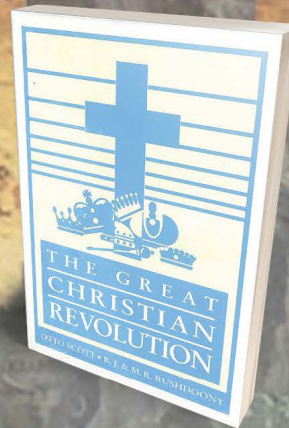
Incredible events and stories of courageous Reformers. 288 pages Over 200 pictures and maps **R130\***



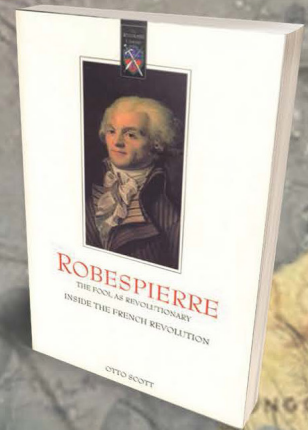
An easy to read history book, developed over many years of travel, research, investigation, presentations and interactions with key-players in our country's history. 208 Pages & 185 pictures. **R98\***



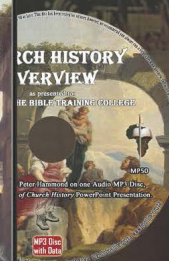
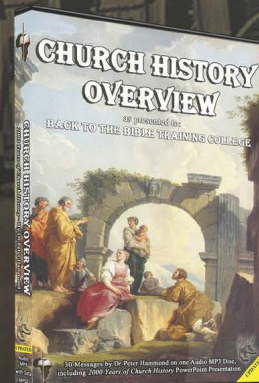
This book outlines the thrilling story of the onward march of the Church of Christ from the earliest times to the end of the nineteenth century. 255 pages with 128 pictures **R110\***



A major work on the impact of Reformed thinking on our civilization. Some of the studies, historical and theological, break new ground and provide perspectives previously unknown or neglected. 334 pages **R100\***



The best book on the French Revolution. This book recounts more than the life of Robespierre. It graphically describes the horrors of the French Revolution and gives us vivid descriptions of all of the main participants in that orgy of blood, horror and death. 270 pages **R80\***



30 Lectures by Dr. Peter Hammond on one Audio MP3 Disc, including 2000 Years of Church History PowerPoint Presentation. **R120\***



est. 1995

Tel: 021 689 7478 Fax: 086 551 7490  
 admin@christianlibertybooks.co.za  
 www.christianlibertybooks.co.za

www.hmsschoolofchristianjournalism.org

\* prices exclude postage





## Chapter 1

**An OVERVIEW of 2000 YEARS of CHURCH HISTORY****THE EARLY CHURCH****PENTECOST**

AD 30           **Evangelism** explosion throughout the known world.  
**Persecution.**  
 Doctrines formulated.  
 Canon of Scripture established.  
 Matthew establishes the Church in Abyssinia.  
 Mark establishes the Church in Egypt.  
 Thomas establishes the Church in India.

Key individuals:

Peter, Paul, Mark, Justin Martyn, Origen, Irenaeus, Cyprian, Polycarp, Perpetua, Tertullian.

**CONSTANTINE**

AD 312           The conversion of the Roman Emperor Constantine.  
*The Edict of Toleration* - freedom for Christianity.  
 Easy Christianity led to laxity.  
 Heresies, controversies and divisions.  
 Church councils.  
 Ecumenical Creeds drawn up and agreed upon.  
 Missionary growth.  
 Rise of Monasteries (spiritual martyrs)/Mission bases.  
 Barbarian Invasions.  
**Collapse of the Roman Empire.**  
*Confessions* and *City of God* written by Augustine.

Key individuals:

Ulphilas, Athanasius, Ambrose, Augustine, Chrysostom, Jerome, Patrick, Columba.

**MIDDLE AGES**

AD 493           King Clovis of the Franks converted to Christianity.

AD 632           **The Rise of Islam.**  
 Annihilation of Christian communities throughout North Africa and the Middle East.  
 Destruction of over 3 200 churches by Muslim *Jihad*.

AD 716           Boniface sets out on his mission to Europe

AD 723           The Venerable Bede publishes "*On the Reckoning of Time*" and separates all dates into BC and AD making the birth of Jesus Christ the Hinge of History.

AD 731           The Venerable Bede completes "*Ecclesiastical History of the English Nation*".

AD 732           Charles Martel "*the Hammer*" stops the Muslim advance at the Battle of Tours/Portiers in France.

AD 793           The Viking raid on Lindisfarne launches the Age of the Vikings.

AD 800           Charlemagne crowned Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire.

AD 878           King Alfred the Great begins the conversion of the Vikings and writes *the Dooms* which lay foundations for ***The Common Law***.

AD 966           Polish people converted to Christianity.

AD 988           Russians converted to Christianity.

AD 995           Norway converted to Christianity.

AD 1054          **The East-West Schism** divides Western Latin (Roman Catholic) churches from Eastern Greek (Orthodox) churches.



- AD 1095 In response to 5 centuries of Islamic *Jihad*, and the destruction of over 30,000 churches, the **First Crusade** is launched as a counter attack.
- AD 1099 The liberation of Jerusalem from the Muslims is achieved.
- AD 1150 Universities of Paris and Oxford founded.
- AD 1177 The Waldensian movement begins.
- AD 1215 The first statute (written restriction on government) - *Magna Carta*.
- AD 1231 The Papal Inquisition established by Pope Gregory IX.
- AD 1347 **The plague** decimates Europe.
- AD 1377 **The Great Papal Schism.**
- AD 1380 Professor John Wycliffe translates the Latin Bible into English.
- AD 1400 **Renaissance.**
- AD 1415 Professor John Hus burned at the stake at Constance.
- AD 1453 **Constantinople falls** to the Muslim Turks.
- AD 1454 Invention of the Printing Press by Johannes Gutenberg.
- AD 1456 Johannes Gutenberg produces the world's first printed book- *The Bible* in Latin.
- AD 1492 **Reconquista:** The liberation of Spain from Islamic occupation completed.
- AD 1492 Christopher Columbus discovers America.

Key Individuals:

Boniface, Bede, Alfred the Great, Charlemagne, Peter Waldo, Bernard of Clairvaux, Francis of Assisi, John Wycliffe, John Hus, Jerome, Savonarola.

**REFORMATION**

- AD 1517 Professor Martin Luther posts his **95 Theses** against papal indulgences.
- AD 1517 *Sola Scriptura*- Scripture alone is our authority.  
*Sola Gratia*- Salvation is by the Grace of God alone.  
*Sola Fide*- received by faith alone.  
*Solus Christus*- Christ alone is the Head of the Church.  
*Soli Deo Gloria*- For the glory of God alone.  
 Rediscovery of Bible doctrines, Justification by faith alone, the priesthood of all believers, Grace above sacraments, Scripture before tradition, Faith before works.
- AD 1519 Ulrich Zwingli launches Reformation in Zurich with Biblical exposition.
- AD 1521 Martin Luther stands firm before Emperor Charles V. "*My conscience is captive to the Word of God.*"
- AD 1526 William Tyndale smuggles into England the first printed copies of the New Testament in English.
- AD 1530 Philipp Melanchthon presents *The Augsburg Confession*.
- AD 1534 Henry VIII of England declares *The Act of Supremacy* and the Church of England breaks with Rome.
- AD 1536 John Calvin publishes the first edition of *The Institutes of the Christian Religion*.
- AD 1549 Archbishop Thomas Cranmer's *Book of Common Prayer* is authorised by Parliament.
- AD 1555 Over 300 prominent Protestant leaders are burned at the stake under "*Bloody Mary*" of England.
- AD 1559 John Knox returns from exile to lead the Reformation in Scotland.
- AD 1563 Foxe's *Book of Martyrs* published.
- AD 1571 The Turkish fleet is destroyed at the Battle of **Lepanto**.



AD 1572      **St. Bartholomew's Day Massacre** in France.

AD 1588      The Spanish Armada is defeated by the English Royal Navy.

Key individuals:

Martin Luther, Ulrich Zwingli, William Tyndale, William Farel, John Calvin, John Knox, Thomas Cranmer, Heinrich Bullinger, William of Orange.

### **THE AGE OF THE PURITANS**

AD 1611      Publication of the ***King James Version*** of the Bible and the rise of the Puritans.

AD 1618      Thirty Years War between Catholics and Protestants begins.

AD 1620      Pilgrims sail to America, sign ***The Mayflower Compact***.

AD 1632      Gustavus Adolphus - *The Lion from the North* liberates Germany from the Catholic League and the Austrian Empire.

AD 1642      The English Civil War begins.

AD 1646      ***The Westminster Confession of Faith***.

AD 1648      Peace of Westphalia ends Thirty Years War.

AD 1678      John Bunyan's ***The Pilgrim's Progress*** published.

Key individuals:

Gustavus Adolphus, Oliver Cromwell, John Owen, John Bunyan.

### **THE GREATEST CENTURY OF REVIVAL**

AD 1707      Publication of Isaac Watt's *Hymns and Spiritual Songs*.

AD 1727      Spiritual Awakening at Herrnhut launches Moravian missionary movement.

AD 1735      **Great Evangelical Awakening** begins under Jonathan Edwards preaching "*Sinners in the hands of an angry God.*"

AD 1739      Great Evangelical Awakening spreads through the open air preaching of George Whitefield and John Wesley.

AD 1742      Handel's ***Messiah***.

AD 1789      The French Revolution.

Key individuals:

Isaac Watts, Count Nicholas Von Zinzendorf, Johann Sebastian Bach, Jonathan Edwards, George Whitefield, John and Charles Wesley.

### **THE GREATEST CENTURY OF MISSIONS**

AD 1792      William Carey writes ***An Enquiry into the Obligation of Christians to Use Means for the Conversion of the Heathen*** – and launches the modern missionary movement.

AD 1793      William Carey sets sail for India.

AD 1807      William Wilberforce's campaign to abolish the slave trade succeeds.

AD 1812      America's first foreign Missionaries, Adoniram and Ann Judson, sail for Burma.

AD 1815      The Battle of Waterloo ends the 25 years of French revolutionary wars.

AD 1841      David Livingstone begins his Missionary work in Africa.

AD 1851      Robert Moffat completes the translation of the whole Bible into Tswana.

AD 1854      Hudson Taylor begins his Mission to China.

Charles Spurgeon begins his ministry at New Park Street Baptist Church, London.

Florence Nightingale launches modern nursing.



- AD 1857 David Livingstone's book *Missionary Travels* is published.
- AD 1859 Revival in Ireland.
- AD 1860 Revival in South Africa
- AD 1865 William Booth founds the Salvation Army.

Key individuals:

William Carey, William Wilberforce, Adoniram Judson, David Livingstone, Charles Spurgeon, D.L. Moody, Florence Nightingale, Hudson Taylor, William Booth, Samuel Ajai Crowther, Mary Slessor, C.T. Studd, Andrew Murray.

**THE GREATEST CENTURY OF PERSECUTION**

- AD 1899-1902 **Anglo-Boer War** in South Africa- scorched earth and concentration camp policy cripples Afrikaaner population development.
- AD 1903 Vladimir Lenin organizes the Bolshevik Revolutionary Group - out of which the Communist Party of the Soviet Union developed.
- AD 1906 Azusa Street Revival launches the Pentecostal movement.
- AD 1910 Publication of *The Fundamentals* launches the Fundamentalist movement.
- AD 1910 **First World Missions Conference** held in Edinburgh.
- AD 1914-1918 **First World War** erodes family stability by conscripting women into factory work, destroys the Austrian-Hungarian Empire which had resisted the threat of the Muslim Turks for centuries, and collapses the German and Russian Empires, creating a vacuum which socialist dictatorships would exploit. WWI marks the end of the greatest century of Missions and the beginning of the worst century of persecution.
- AD 1917 Bolshevik Revolution in Russia brings about the Soviet Union which killed over 66 million people - most of them Christians.
- AD 1921 First Christian radio broadcast.
- AD 1924 Joseph Stalin succeeds Lenin, destroys or confiscates and closes over 49,000 churches and slaughters millions of Christians in Russia.
- AD 1939-1945 **Second World War** results in the expansion of Communist control over most of Central and Eastern Europe including Poland, East Germany, Latvia, Lithuania, Estonia, Czechoslovakia, Hungary, Romania, Bulgaria, Yugoslavia and Albania.
- AD 1948 World Council of Churches formed - promoting liberalism, ecumenicism and apostasy.
- AD 1949 With Japan defeated, Communists seize control of mainland China. One third of the world's population are now controlled by communist dictators.
- AD 1950 Communist North Korea, with Soviet aid, invades South Korea. Korean War.
- AD 1956 Sudan granted independence and begins persecution of the Christian Black South.
- AD 1959 Fidel Castro seizes power in Cuba and establishes Communist oppression, persecutes Christians and exports revolution throughout South America and Africa.
- AD 1960 Belgium grants independence to the Congo which degenerates into Communist chaos. Over 260 missionaries martyred and many hundreds of thousands of Christians massacred.
- Bible smuggling into Communist nations.
- James Kennedy launches Evangelism Explosion.
- AD 1961 The Berlin Wall is constructed to stem the flow of refugees fleeing oppression in Communist East Germany.
- AD 1966 The Communist Cultural Revolution annihilates millions of Christians in China.
- Revival breaks out at KwaSizabantu Mission in KwaZulu.



## An Overview of Church History

- AD 1975 Portugal hands over control of Mozambique to Communist Frelimo, and Angola to Communist MPLA who invite in Soviet and Cuban troops to help them crush the Christian Church in these countries.
- AD 1980 After a courageous 15 year fight for survival, Rhodesia is betrayed into the hands of Robert Mugabe's Communist ZANU. Many missionaries and Christians martyred and churches destroyed in Zimbabwe.
- AD 1980 Moral Majority, Christian Reconstruction, the Pro-Life Movement and resurgence of Christian Schools and Home schooling.
- AD 1989 The Fall of the Berlin Wall and collapse of Communist regimes throughout Eastern Europe.
- AD 1990's Dramatic increase in persecution of Christians in Muslim nations such as Sudan, Nigeria, Pakistan, Indonesia, etc.; Revival amidst persecution in Sudan.
- AD 1994 Holocaust in Rwanda kills over 800,000 Christians in 6 weeks.
- AD 2001 Terror attacks on the World Trade Centre marks the start of America's War Against Terror.
- AD 2009 Calvin 500 marks the 500th anniversary of the birth of Reformer John Calvin.
- AD 2010 3<sup>rd</sup> Lausanne Congress on World Evangelism, Cape Town, the largest and most representative missions conference in history.
- AD 2011 So-called Arab Spring, Islamic Revolution sweeps the Middle East leading to exponential increase of persecution in the Middle East.  
South Sudan achieves Independence from Islamic Sudan.
- AD 2013 Livingstone 200 movement celebrates the 200<sup>th</sup> anniversary of the birth of the best friend Africa ever had, Dr. David Livingstone.
- AD 2017 Reformation 500 movement marks the 500th anniversary of the launch of the Protestant Reformation by Professor Martin Luther nailing the *95 Theses* to the door of the Castle Church in Wittenberg. Coalition on Revival launches International Church Council.

### Key individuals:

Karl Barth, C.S. Lewis, Billy Graham, Alexander Solzhenitsyn, Richard Wurmbrand, Francis Schaefer, R.J. Rushdoony, James Kennedy, R.C. Sproul, Erlo Stegen, Ian Paisley.

### Biographies and Recommended reading:

*Victorious Christians – Who Changed the World* by Dr. Peter Hammond, Christian Liberty Books, 2012.

*Sketches from Church History* by S. M. Houghton, Banner of Truth, 1980.

*The Great Christian Revolution* by Otto Scott, Ross House, 1991.

*The Greatest Century of Reformation* by Dr. Peter Hammond, Christian Liberty Books, 2006, updated and expanded 2017.

*The Greatest Century of Missions* by Dr. Peter Hammond, Christian Liberty Books, 2002, updated and expanded 2016.

*The Black Book of Communism* by Stephane Courtois, Harvard University, 1999.

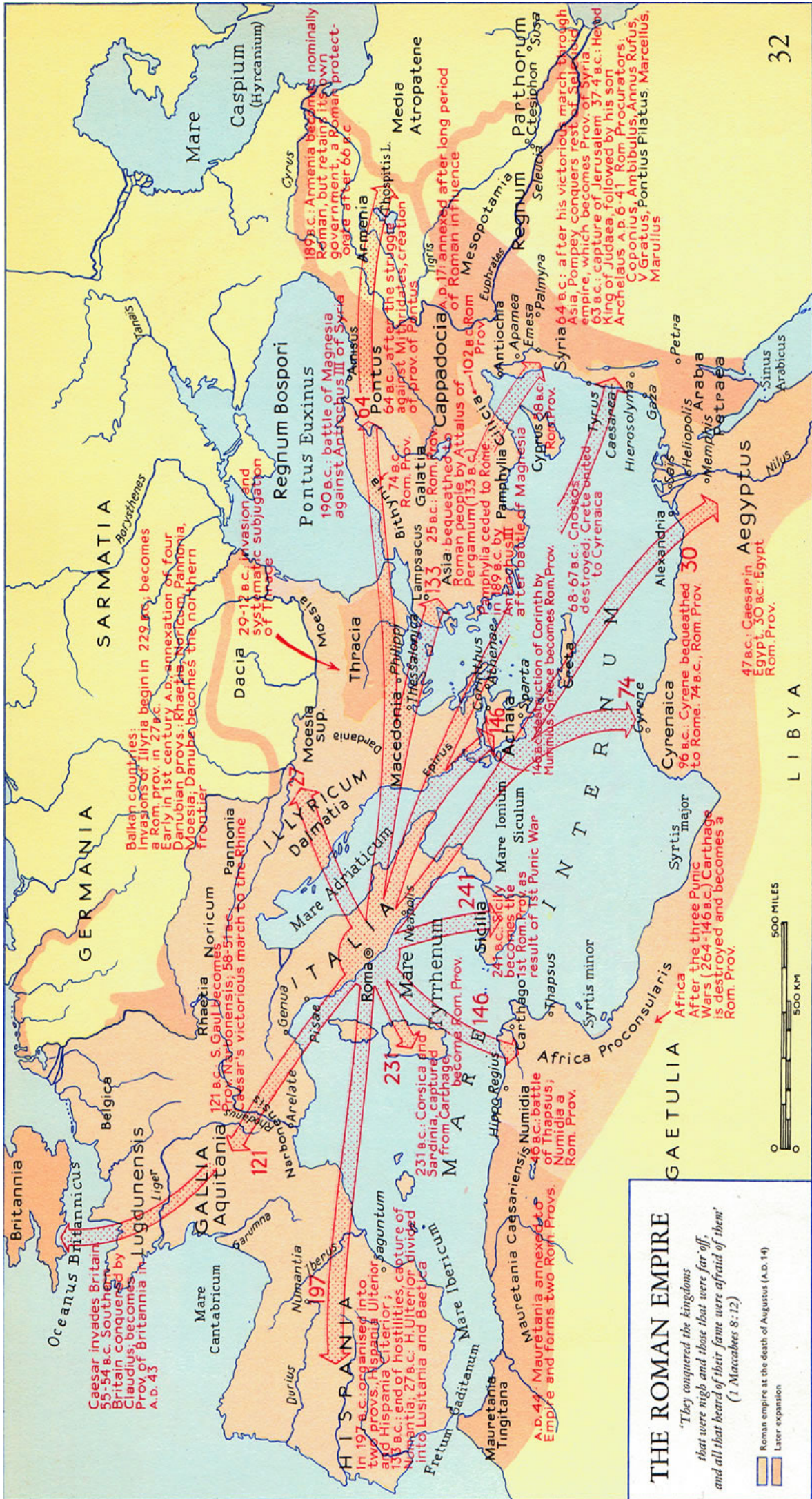
*Freedom Betrayed*, by Herbert Hoover, 2011

*A Christian History of Africa* by Dr. Peter Hammond, William Carey Bible Institute, 2017



**Frontline Fellowship** P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org





### THE ROMAN EMPIRE

*'They conquered the kingdoms that were rich and those that were far off, and all that heard of their fame were afraid of them'*  
(1 Maccabees 8:12)

Roman empire at the death of Augustus (A.D. 14)  
Later expansion



**BRITANNIA**  
Caesar invades Britain 55-54 B.C. Southern Britain conquered by Claudius, becomes Prov. of Britannia in A.D. 43

**GALLIA**  
121 B.C.: S. Gaul becomes Prov. Narbonensis; 58-51 B.C.: Caesar's victorious march to the Rhine

**GERMANIA**  
Balkan countries: Invasions of Illyria begin in 229 B.C.; becomes a Rom. prov. in 27 B.C.  
Early in 1st century A.D. annexation of four Danubian provs.: Rhaetia, Noricum, Pannonia, Moesia; Danube becomes the northern frontier

**ITALY**  
231 B.C.: Corsica and Sardinia captured from Carthage and become Rom. Provs.

**SPAIN**  
197 B.C.: Hispania organized into two provs., Hispania Ulterior and Hispania Citerior; 133 B.C.: end of hostilities; capture of Numantia; 27 B.C.: Hispania divided into Lusitania and Baetica

**AFRICA**  
241 B.C.: Sicily becomes the Carthaginian Rom. Prov. as result of 1st Punic War  
209 B.C.: Sicily becomes the result of 2nd Punic War  
146 B.C.: Carthage is destroyed and becomes a Rom. Prov.  
46 B.C.: battle of Thapsus; Numidia a Rom. Prov.  
A.D. 44: Mauretania annexed to Empire and forms two Rom. Provs.

**ASIA**  
190 B.C.: battle of Magnesia against Antiochus III of Syria  
189 B.C.: Asia bequeathed to Roman people by Attalus of Pergamum (133 B.C.)  
189 B.C.: Pamphylia ceded to Rome  
102 B.C.: Asia annexed after long period of Roman influence  
64 B.C.: after the struggle against Mithridates, creation of prov. of Pontus

**SYRIA**  
64 B.C.: after his victorious march through Asia Pompey conquers rest of Syria and empire, which becomes Prov. of Syria  
63 B.C.: capture of Jerusalem; 37 B.C.: Herod King of Judaea followed by his son Archelaus A.D. 6-41: Rom. Procurators: Coponius, Ambibulus, Annus Rufus, V. Gratus, Pontius Pilatus, Marcellus

**EGYPT**  
47 B.C.: Caesar in Egypt  
30 B.C.: Egypt Rom. Prov.



## Chapter 2

### The TWELVE APOSTLES

#### **Peter**

Simon, whom the Lord Jesus renamed Peter, was born in Bethsaida, in Galilee. He was a fisherman, the son of Jonah. His brother, Andrew brought him to the Lord. It was Peter who preached so powerfully on the Day of Pentecost in Jerusalem, winning over 3,000 to Christ. After being imprisoned several times in Jerusalem, Peter and his wife ministered in Babylon, from where he wrote his first Epistle (1 Peter). While ministering in Rome, John Mark (the writer of the Gospel of Mark), served as his translator. Mark wrote his Gospel under the apostolic authority of Peter, who was eyewitness to much of what was recorded.

The emperor Nero personally condemned the Apostle Peter to death in AD68. Peter insisted that he was not worthy to be crucified in the same manner as His Lord and was thus crucified upside down. Before he met his death at the hands of the Romans, he converted his jailers, Processus and Martinianus, and 47 others in the prison, to the Lord.

#### **Andrew**

Andrew was the first of the Apostles to follow Jesus. Throughout the Gospels we see him bringing people to the Lord, including the little boy with the five loaves and two fish. After the Day of Pentecost, Andrew engaged in widespread missions to the Caucasian Mountains, (present day Georgia), to the Scythians on the Caspian Sea, to Byzantium (which is present day Turkey), to Greece, to Thrace and Macedonia. Church historian Eusebius records that Andrew preached to the Scythians, Sogdians and the Saxons.

In Patros he was martyred, crucified on an X shaped cross which today is know as the St. Andrews cross. The governor of the Edessenes, Ageas, attempted to force all Christians to sacrifice to the Roman idols. Andrew publically confronted him and was condemned to death. Andrew declared: *"I would not have preached the honour and glory of the cross if I feared the death of the Cross."* Andrew was martyred 30 November AD80. Four countries claim Andrew as their patron Saint: Russia, Greece, Germany and Scotland. 30 November is St. Andrews Day. The St. Andrews cross is the national flag of Scotland.

#### **John**

The Apostle John was the son of Zebedee, a fisherman of Galilee. His mother, Salome, was the sister of Mary, the mother of Jesus. John, his brother James, and the Apostles Peter and Andrew, were all partners in a fishing business prior to their calls by the Lord. John's brother, James, was the first of the Apostles to die, John was the last. All of the Apostles except John, met a violent death. However, John lived a martyr's life. The Lord Jesus entrusted His mother Mary to the care of John. John founded churches throughout Asia, wrote the Book of Revelation, the Gospel according to John and 1, 2 and 3 John.

#### **James**

James, the elder brother of the Apostle John, was the first Apostle to suffer martyrdom. By order of King Herod Agrippa, James was beheaded in Jerusalem in AD44.

#### **Matthew**

Matthew was a tax collector before being called by the Lord. He was a gifted writer, and perhaps the best educated of the Apostles. He is the writer of the Gospel according to Matthew. He undertook missions to Persia, Egypt and Ethiopia where he was martyred for Christ.

#### **Philip**

After the Ascension of Christ, Philip travelled into Scythia (in what is today Southern Russia) and ministered there for 20 years. Philip is also believed to have ministered as far as Gaul (present day France). After this he ministered in Asia Minor (what is today, Turkey), where, in Hierapolis, he was used of the Lord to heal the wife of the Roman proconsul. For this he was crucified.

#### **Bartholomew**

The Apostle Bartholomew ministered through Asia Minor, including in Hierapolis, Laodicea, and Colosse, in Armenia and in India. In AD68, Bartholomew was martyred in Albanopolis, (now Derbend in Azerbaijan), after he converted the king of Armenia to Christianity. The king's pagan brother murdered Bartholomew in retaliation.

**Thomas**

Thomas Didymas (the twin) was a fisherman from Galilee. After the Ascension, Thomas went as missionary to Babylon where he established the first Christian churches there. Thereafter he ministered in Persia and India, winning many converts. The Bar Thomas Church endures in India to this day. He was martyred in Mylapore (what today is a suburb of Madras), on 21 December.

**James the Younger**

James, (the son of Alphaeus) was the brother of Matthew and the son of Mary, (the wife of Cleophas another follower of the Lord). James came from Capernaum. He established the churches in Syria. For preaching Christ, he was thrown down from the Temple by the scribes and pharisees and then stoned to death, in Jerusalem.

**Jude (Thaddeus)**

The Apostle Jude took the Gospel to Armenia where he established the church in Edessa. Armenia became one of the first Christian kingdoms. Later he evangelised in Syria and Persia. Jude was martyred in Kara Kalisa, near the Caspian Sea, 40 miles from Tabriz (in what is today Iran).

**Simon**

Simon the Zealot ministered throughout North Africa, including in the great city of Carthage. He planted the Gospel in Spain and ministered in Britain where he was martyred 10 May, 61AD in Caistor, Lincolnshire.

**Matthias**

Matthias was chosen as an Apostle to replace the traitor Judas. Matthias evangelised in Armenia and the Ukraine, planting churches in Colchis and Sebastopol. He was martyred in Adjure, in what is today Georgia, in the Caucasian Mountains.

*“Beloved, do not think it strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened to you; but rejoice to the extent that you partake of Christ’s sufferings, that when His glory is revealed, you may also be glad with exceeding joy.”* 1 Peter 4:12

*“For to this you were called because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example that you should follow in His steps.”* 1 Peter 2:21

Dr Peter Hammond





## Chapter 3

**PERPETUA - COURAGEOUS CHRISTIAN MARTYR**

Perpetua was a Christian noblewoman who, at the end of the second century, lived in Carthage (North Africa). Her Christian courage and steadfastness so impressed the famous theologian Augustine that he preached four sermons about her witness for Christ.

**Persecution**

In AD 202 when the Roman Emperor Septimius Severus determined to eradicate the vibrant Christian community in North Africa, Perpetua, a 22-year-old mother, was among the first to be arrested.

**Parental Pressure**

From her diary, and that of another prisoner, we have some insights as to her witness in prison. Her pagan father visited her and pleaded with her to deny that she was a Christian. Perpetua responded that it was impossible that she *“be called anything than what I am, a Christian.”*

Some days later, when her father again visited her, Perpetua was nursing her young son. The father pleaded with her: *“Have pity on my grey head. Have pity on me, your father...do not abandon me to be the reproach of men. Think of your brothers; think of your mother and your aunt; think of your child, who will not be able to live once you are gone. Give up your pride!”*

**Steadfast**

Perpetua remained steadfast. *“It will all happen in the prisoner’s dock as God wills, for you may be sure that we are not left to ourselves but are all in His power.”*

**On Trial**

On the day of her trial, Perpetua and her friends were marched before the governor Hilarianus. The friends of Perpetua were questioned first. Each of them readily admitted to being a Christian and each refused to make an act of Emperor worship.

As the governor turned to question Perpetua, her father, carrying Perpetua’s son in his arms, dramatically rushed to Perpetua and, grabbing hold of her arm, pleaded: *“Perform the sacrifice. Have pity on your baby!”*

The governor, Hilarianus, added: *“Have pity on your father’s grey head; have pity on your infant son. Offer the sacrifice for the welfare of the Emperor.”*

The response of Perpetua was straightforward: *“I will not.”*

*“Are you a Christian then?”* asked the governor.

*“Yes, I am,”* Perpetua responded decisively.

The Roman governor then condemned Perpetua and her friends to be thrown to the wild beasts and to die in the arena.

**In the Arena**

When Perpetua and her friends entered the stadium they were dressed in belted tunics and they were singing Psalms. The amphitheatre was filled with nobles, ladies, senators and ambassadors, and tens of thousands shouted their insults and derisions as she was led to her death. Wild beasts and gladiators circled them on the arena floor and the crowds in the stands roared, demanding to see blood. Because of their joyful demeanour the crowd demanded that the Christians be scourged first. This was done.

As the mob screamed abuse, Perpetua was heard to say: *“You have condemned us, but God will condemn you.”*

## Courage

A wild heifer charged and tossed Perpetua into the air. As she fell on her back she sat up and adjusted her ripped tunic, *“thinking more of her modesty than of her pain.”* She then walked over to help Felicitas, her servant to her feet. Perpetua encouraged the other Christians: *“You must all stand fast in the Faith and not be weakened by what we have gone through.”*

Then a starved leopard, which had been goaded, was let loose, but it would not harm Perpetua. The impatient crowd began to scream for the death of the Christians. Perpetua, Felicitas and their Christian friends were lined up and one by one they were slain with the sword by gladiators.

## Perpetual Faithfulness

Perpetua was only 22 years old when she died in the arena in Carthage. Her bold testimony: *“I am a Christian and cannot deny Christ”* was repeated throughout the empire. Those in the amphitheatre who had witnessed her martyrdom reported that Perpetua and Felicitas came into the arena *“joyfully as though they were on their way to Heaven.”* Witnesses described Perpetua in the arena as *“young and beautiful”, “a pure and modest Christian lady”, “with shining countenance and calm step, as the beloved of God, as a bride of Christ, putting down everyone’s stare by her own intense gaze.”* As Perpetua means perpetual and Felicitas means faithful, their courageous martyrdom together spelled out what is today the motto of the Marines: *Always Faithful.*

## The Most Famous Female Martyr in the Roman Empire

Perpetua became the most famous Christian lady to die a martyr’s death in the Roman Empire. Her example of Christian resolve and courage, choosing to suffer and die with a clear conscience, rather than deny her Saviour, inspired generations of Roman Christians to stand firm in the face of relentless persecution. Her published diary also made her the first female Christian author.

*“In this you greatly rejoice, though now for a little while, if need be, you have been grieved by various trials, that the genuineness of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perishes, though it is tested by fire, may be found to praise, honour and glory at the Revelation of Jesus Christ.”* 1 Peter 1:6-7

Dr Peter Hammond



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
 admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 4

**PATRICK of IRELAND**

Patrick was only 16 years old when he saw a fleet of 50 longboats heading for the shore. As the Roman Legions had long since departed Britain, Patrick's home town was vulnerable to attack. As the Irish raiders leapt from their boats onto the pebbled beach, sounding their war-horns, the population fled in terror. The attackers looted and burned the village and carried away captives, including young Patrick.

**Enslaved**

The year was AD 405. Patrick's name in Latin was *Patricius*, meaning "Noble". He was the son of a Civil Magistrate, but now he had become a slave in Ireland. Patrick was sold to a cruel warrior chief whose stockade in Northern Ireland was surrounded by sharp poles with the heads of his opponents impaled on them. Patrick was put to work as shepherd to care for his master's pigs and sheep. He lived a lonely existence in the nearby hills, enduring long bouts of hunger and thirst, isolated from human company for months at a time. Patrick witnessed the superstitions of the druid priests who sacrificed prisoners of war to their war gods and newborns to the harvest gods. Skulls were used as drinking bowls; heads of decapitated enemies were used as footballs.

**Conversion**

In this strange place at "the ends of the earth" amongst these fierce people, Patrick remembered the faith of his father and grandfather, and the prayers of his mother and turned to Christ. Kneeling on the slopes of the Slemish Mountain, near what is now the town of Ballymena, Patrick prayed, sometimes a hundred times a day.

**Escape**

After six years of slavery, Patrick was led of the Lord to escape and run nearly 200 miles to a coastal port where he was able to persuade a captain to take him along with a shipment of Irish wolfhounds. A storm blew them off course to land on the coast of Gaul (France). Attacks by Vandals had devastated the area and there was no food to be found in the once fertile area. Here Patrick was able to repay the kindness of the ship's captain by praying for the Lord's provision and seeing a herd of pigs appear.

**Called**

Patrick received a Macedonian call. In a vision, an Irishman named Victoricius presented him with letters entitled "*The Voice of the Irish*": "*We appeal to you, holy servant boy, to come and walk among us again.*" Patrick was "*pierced to my very heart*" and he returned to the land where he had suffered as a slave many years before.

**Opposition**

Patrick was over 40 years old when he arrived as a missionary to Ireland in AD 432. He faced fierce opposition from the Druids. Patrick survived numerous attempts on his life and confronted the idolatry, immorality, slavery and human sacrifices of the savage tribes. "*Daily I expect murder, fraud or captivity, but I fear none of these things because of the promises of Heaven. I have cast myself into the hands of God Almighty who rules everywhere.*" Patrick delighted in taking risks for the Gospel. "*I must take this decision disregarding risks involved and make known the gifts of God and His everlasting consolation. Neither must I fear any such risk in faithfully preaching God's Name boldly in every place, so that even after my death, a spiritual legacy may be left for my brethren and my children.*"



## Confrontation

At Tara, Patrick challenged the Druids to a contest. The Druids invoked demons and brought a dark fog over the land. Patrick prayed and suddenly the fog cleared and the sun shone brightly. The king ordered 27 chariots to go and seize Patrick. He prayed aloud: *“May God come up to scatter His enemies and may those who hate Him flee from His face.”* The charioteers fell dead. Patrick rebuked the king: *“If you do not believe now, you will die on the spot, for the wrath of God descends on your head.”* The king fell on his knees before the missionary and pledged his realm to Christ. Many turned to Christ on that day.

One of Patrick’s writings was a letter excommunicating a tyrant Coroticus who had carried off some of Patrick’s converts into slavery. Within his lifetime Patrick ended the slave trade in Ireland. The legend that Patrick drove all the snakes out of Ireland has to do with his spiritual warfare in driving the demons from the land. The famous *Lorica* “Patrick’s Breastplate” prayer of protection expresses Patrick’s confidence in God to protect him from *“every fierce, merciless force that may come upon my body and soul, incantations of false prophets, black laws of paganism, deceit of idolatry, spells of druids...”*

## Mission Strategy

Patrick was one of the first great missionaries who brought the Gospel beyond the boundaries of the old Roman civilisation. Patrick’s missionary strategy was to concentrate on converting the tribal kings. As the kings converted, they gave their sons to Patrick to be trained as missionaries. From kingdom to kingdom, Patrick converted pagans, built churches, trained disciples, ordained deacons and ministers and built mission stations. Patrick provided pastors with written doctrinal standards with which to teach their people.

## Faithful and Fruitful

For 30 years Patrick evangelised Ireland, converting many chiefs and kings, establishing over 300 congregations and baptising 120,000 people. Patrick became an inspiring example for Celtic Christians. His life of continuous prayer, his love for the Scriptures, his love of God’s Creation and his missionary vision inspired many hundreds of Celts to take the Gospel to Scotland, England and throughout the continent of Europe.



## Inspiring Example

Although Patrick is commonly called Saint, he described himself as a sinner. Although Patrick is the Patron Saint of the Irish, he was not actually born in Ireland, but in Britain. It may also surprise people to know that Patrick was never canonized by the Roman Catholic church, but has been considered the Patron Saint of Ireland as a result of popular devotion and long-standing tradition.

On the last Sunday of every July, up to 30,000 pilgrims pass Saint Patrick’s statue and climb to the top of Croagh Patrick, commemorating Patrick’s 40 day fast on that 2,710 foot summit. 17 March is celebrated as St. Patrick’s Day worldwide. The greatest legacy of Patrick was the tremendous spiritual movement he launched in Ireland and his followers who sent out missionaries to evangelise not only the rest of the British Isles, but much of the continent of Europe.

*“In mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God, ...I have fully preached the Gospel of Christ. And so I have made it my aim to preach the Gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build on another man’s foundation.”* Romans 15:19 – 20





## Chapter 5

# COLUMBA - MISSIONARY to SCOTLAND

### **From an Illustrious Family**

The handsome and hot-headed Columba was one of the most successful missionaries in history. In A.D 521 in Ulster, Northern Ireland, he was christened Colum (from the Latin word for Dove). Columba's grandfather, Conarl, had been baptised by the great missionary to Ireland, Patrick. Columba's parents were both Christians; his father was a member of the royal O' Neill family, from which the High King of the Irish was chosen at Tara. His mother, Ethme, was a descendant of a king of the Irish province of Leinster.

### **Intelligent and Energetic**

Columba was described as a robust child, full of mischief and energy and combative. He was described as a "*fine figure, his splendid colour and his noble manliness made him beloved by all.*" Tall and strong, his first rate mind and zeal for learning, combined with a powerful voice and a well developed sense of humour, made him very popular.

### **Evangelistic Zeal and Missionary Vision**

Columba loved reading and praying the Psalms and, as his relationship to Christ developed, he began a systematic study of the Scriptures and entered monastic life. Columba was ordained to the priesthood and studied further. Columba developed a fervent calling to missionary outreach and began to conduct evangelistic campaigns. He established monasteries throughout Ireland. His reputation as a Godly and scholarly Christian increased.

### **Conflict**

However, in the year of 561, a traumatic incident occurred that altered the direction of Columba's life. Eager for Scriptural knowledge and for the best Bible texts, he copied (without permission) a manuscript of Jerome's translation of the Psalms and Gospels. When the authorities learned of this, they demanded that his copy of the rare text be destroyed. When Columba refused to do this, a judgment was sought from the High King, Ataru, who decided against Columba. When he still refused to surrender his precious copy of the Psalms and Gospels, a civil war erupted between Columba and his cousin the High King.

### **The Battle of Culdrevmey**

Columba and his allies were victorious at the Battle of Culdrevmey in which more than 3,000 men were killed.

### **Missionary Restitution**

Columba felt such remorse over the carnage he had caused that he left Ireland determined to convert the same number of souls in Scotland as those whose deaths he felt responsible for in Ireland. Selecting 12 companions from among his old and trusted friends, Columba set out and established a mission station on the island of Iona, about half a mile off the Scottish mainland. From this missionary base camp, Columba and his co-workers launched missionary outreaches amongst the war-like Picts and Scots.

### **Iona Mission Base**

Columba himself lived a Spartan lifestyle in austerity, sleeping on a bare rock, with a stone pillow. Under his leadership the Iona community was a place of constant activity where the monks engaged in agricultural work, carpentry, prayer and study – with evangelistic preaching and missionary work in nearby Scotland.

### **Missions to Europe**

From A.D 563 – 597, Iona was the centre for the evangelisation of Scotland and Northern England. Using the political contacts of his royal lineage, Columba developed relationships with the chiefs and kings to aid in the conversion of their subjects. Columba and his monks founded possibly more than 100 monasteries throughout Europe. Columba and his men undertook missionary outreaches as far afield as France, Germany, Switzerland and Italy.

### **Confrontations**

He feuded with popes, kings, bishops and even his own followers. At one point, he had a conflict with the polygamous king, Theuderic, and his mother, Brunhilde, and was expelled from Gaul.

## Winning Scotland for Christ

From Iona, Columba and his missionary monks spread out to make an immeasurable impact for the Gospel on Scotland and the entire Celtic Christian world.

## Psalms and Prayer

On his last day, at age 75, after a day spent transcribing a Psalter, he rose from his stone bed to join his brethren at their traditional midnight service. He collapsed while kneeling in prayer at the altar, revived briefly to give his beloved monks a farewell blessing and died peacefully in the early hours of Sunday 9 June A.D. 597.

## Work, Prayer and Study

Columba's life served as a model of devotion and dedication for future generations of Christians. To Columba his ideal of the Christian life consisted of *"Work, prayer and reading."* This was the heart of his monastic code and central for his converts.

## Living the Bible

Columba's emphasis was living the Bible. His preaching was direct, simple and Biblical. He called on his hearers to submit to Christ as Saviour and Lord, living the rest of their lives in devotion and service for Him.

## Celtic Christianity

Columba left an indelible mark on Irish and Scottish Christianity, bequeathing to his converts a love for books, especially for the Bible. Columba's emphasis on bold evangelism and missionary vision inspired thousands of missionary volunteers from Scotland and Ireland through the centuries.

## Discipling Nations

Columba had a passion for missions. He preached, practised and lived missions. He wrote poetry and instilled his love of poetry and music into his converts. He emphasised the evangelistic impulse in Christianity and promoted it in every way he could throughout his productive life.

*"And so I have made it my aim to preach the Gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build on another man's foundation"* Romans 15:20





## Chapter 6

### BONIFACE - APOSTLE to The GERMANS

#### The Founder of the West

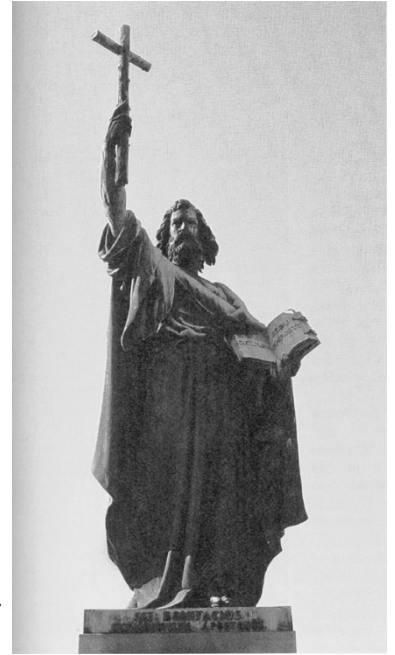
Boniface (originally called Winfrith) has been described as “*The Founder of the West*” and “*The Apostle to the Germans.*” Boniface was undoubtedly one of the most successful missionaries of the first millennium. He not only converted many individuals, but he disciplined an entire nation.

#### Diligent and Disciplined

Boniface was born to Christian parents in the Saxon kingdom of Wessex in England. At an early age he became preoccupied with spiritual matters. Boniface proved to be a zealous student of the Bible and was devoted to disciplined prayer. He was a gifted scholar who excelled in his studies, and served as a noted teacher, poet and grammarian in a Saxon monastery. Boniface grew in purposeful holiness and became a powerful Gospel preacher.

#### Frustration and Failure

In 716, at the age of 43, Boniface set out on a mission to Europe. He had learned that the pagan Friesian king, Radbod, had wiped out the evangelistic work of Saxon missionary Willibrord in Friesland (what is today the Netherlands). This first missionary journey of Boniface was frustrating and unsuccessful. Radbod was involved in a war with Charles Martel, the king of the Franks, and the conflict undermined all attempts at missionary work in Friesland.



#### Determined to Avoid Distractions and Deviations

When he returned home to England, he was offered the prestigious position of being head of the monastery. Boniface had written the first Latin grammar produced in England, several poems and a treatise on metrics. However, Boniface’s heart was set on missions, and he turned down this appointment. Boniface was determined to be a missionary.

#### Missionary to Europe

In 722 he sailed away from England for the last time and worked with Willibrord in Friesland. When King Radbod died, the work in Friesland was able to advance. This freed Boniface to go further south to the pagans of what are now the German states of Hesse and Thuringia. Under the protection of Charles Martel, Boniface “*more than any other individual became God’s instrument to carry Christianity into Germany.*”

#### Fearless Perseverance

A contemporary described Winfrith as: “*he seemed to glow with the salvation bringing fire which our Lord came to send upon the earth.*” He “*surpassed all his predecessors in the extent and results of his ministry.*” With fearless ardour and indomitable perseverance he sought to evangelise the pagans.

#### Bold Evangelism

Boniface was zealous in evangelism and in suppressing heresy. He established churches and monasteries, destroyed idols, baptized heathens and opposed corrupt and immoral clerics. He dealt decisively with heresy and made many enemies, being described as “*difficult, prickly and tactless.*”

#### Confronting Paganism

In a dramatic confrontation with the pagans of Hesse, Boniface hacked down the Sacred Oak of Donar in Geismar. The huge oak was a shrine to the pagan god, Thor. As the tree fell to the ground it broke into four pieces and revealed itself to be rotten from within. Thor’s lack of response in the eyes of the pagans established the authority of the Christian God. This led to thousands of conversions.

#### Destroying Idols

The historian, Willibald, described the scene: “*A great throng of pagans who were there cursed him bitterly among themselves because he was the enemy of their gods.*” However, when they saw the rottenness of the felled oak, “*they stopped cursing and believing, blessed God.*” Boniface used the wood from this felled oak to build a chapel in Fritzlar, which became the centre of his new mission station.

### **Working for Reformation**

As Boniface continued to clash with pagans, heretics and fellow Christians, he became convinced that the church needed to be reformed. No church councils had been held in the Frankish realm for decades before his arrival. Boniface convened 5 councils between 742 and 747.

Boniface took the lead in removing corruption from the existing churches, causing much friction with the Frankish clergy. Most of the Frankish clergy resisted Boniface's work of reform and evangelism and he had to send word to England to recruit more Saxon missionaries to support his dynamic mission. Having thoroughly evangelised Thuringia and Hesse he now turned his attention to Bavaria.

### **Germany is Won to Christ**

Fulda became the spiritual hub of Christianity in Germany. Boniface and his followers travelled throughout the land destroying pagan shrines, building churches and baptizing many thousands. He established a vast network of schools and mission stations.

### **Faithful to the End**

In 754, Boniface prepared a new missionary campaign to the pagans in the North. Already an old man, Boniface took not only his books, but also a burial shroud, anticipating that this could be his last mission. On the Wednesday of Pentecost Week, at Dorkum on the River Borne, while Boniface was teaching 52 new converts, they were surprised and massacred by a horde of unconverted barbarians. Boniface died as he had lived, a soldier of Christ. In seeking to destroy pagan worship and save pagan souls, he incurred the wrath of those whom he had come to seek and help.

### **Converting his Enemies**

Next to the martyred missionary was found a copy of Ambrose's book: "*The Advantage of Death*" with two deep slashes in it. This book is still on display in Fulda, Germany. Many of the pagans who had been part of this attack were so struck by his courage that they repented and were converted to Christ.

### **A Martyr for Christ**

By suffering martyrdom at the end of his long and productive life, Boniface sealed his ministry in a unique way. He left a legacy of dedication, hard work and Christian courage in defence of the Christian faith that would live long after him. Boniface gave German Christianity a distinctively militant character, reflected in the Christian chivalry and military orders of the Middle Ages.

### **A Challenge**

As Boniface had declared: "*Let us die for the holy laws of our fathers. Let us not be dumb dogs, silent spectators, hirelings who flee from the wolf, but faithful shepherds, watchful for the flock of Christ. Let us preach the whole counsel of God to the high and to the low, to the rich and to the poor; to every rank and age, whether in season or out of season, as far as God gives us strength.*"

### **Pentecostal Power**

Throughout his ministry, Boniface hungered and thirsted for the Pentecostal power of the Holy Spirit. He consciously disciplined his life to follow faithfully the example and teaching of Christ and he eagerly embraced the suffering that comes from preaching and living the Gospel. He proved to be an effective missionary, an exceptional organiser, a superb administrator and a courageous Reformer.

### **An Inspiration and Example**

Through his extensive, dynamic missionary outreaches, his reform of the Frankish churches, his uniting of the churches in Southern and Central Germany, and the revitalizing of nominal Christians throughout Northern Europe, Boniface became one of the most prominent role models for later missionaries, and a key figure in the creation of medieval Christian Europe.

### **Apostolic Impact**

In bringing the light of the Gospel to a Europe darkened by barbarianism, Boniface earned the titles: "*Apostle to the Germans*" and "*The Founder of the West.*"

*"Whoever desires to come after Me, let him deny himself and take up his cross, and follow Me. For whoever desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake and the Gospel's will save it."* Mark 8:34 – 35





## Chapter 7

**The VENERABLE BEDE - FATHER of ENGLISH HISTORY**

Bede was one of the most influential Bible teachers and historians, and it is from his practice of dating events from the incarnation of Christ – *Anno Domini* – that our present dating method of separating events before Christ (B.C.) and after Christ (A.D.) came into general use.

**Disciplined Study**

Bede was born to Saxon parents in Jarrow, Northumbria, in Northern England. He entered the monastery at age 7 and devoted all of his time to the study of the Scriptures and absorption in monastic disciplines: daily singing, working, worshipping, learning, teaching and writing. In his 19<sup>th</sup> year he was admitted to the diaconate and in his 30<sup>th</sup> year to the priesthood.

**The First English Author**

Bede was a prodigious writer, he wrote 45 books, including commentaries, textbooks, translations and histories. His knowledge was encyclopaedic. He wrote grammatical and chronological works, geography, hymns, poems, sermons, Biblical exegeses and the first Martyrology with historical notes. Although most of his works were in Latin, Bede was also the first known writer of English prose.

**The Teacher of the Middle Ages**

His didactic and ethical works were so widely spread throughout Europe, and so highly esteemed, that he was described as the Teacher of the Middle Ages. He engaged in lengthy research concerning seasons, cycles, times and events. In 703 he wrote *On Times* and twenty years later, *On the Reckoning of Time*. His chronological research and calculations profoundly affected the way we continue to date events – to this day.

**The Most Learned Man of His Time**

Bede led a life of simplicity and devotion, always occupied with learning, teaching and writing. He was zealous in the performance of his duties. He was known as the most learned man of his time. Proficient in Patristic literature, he mastered the classics and studied in Greek, Hebrew and Latin. Bede was described as kind and generous with a tremendous love for truth and fairness. Many expressed admiration for his devotion to the Lord and service to God's people.

**Faith in Action**

Bede wrote that *“the door of the Kingdom of Heaven”* was not opened to *“those who only know in their learned minds the mysteries of faith and the commandments of their Creator, but to those who have progressed far enough to live by them.”*

**The First English Historian**

One of his greatest achievements was the invaluable *Ecclesiastical History of the English Nation* completed in 731 A.D. His authoritative history of the Christian origins in Britain speak of the Celtic people who were converted to Christianity during the first three centuries after Christ, and details the coming of the Anglo-Saxons, and their subsequent conversion by Celtic missionaries. Bede's devotion to truth and accuracy set an unprecedented standard for future historians. His *History* remains the major source of information on life in early England.

**History is His Story**

Bede described the importance of history: *“For if history records good things of good men, the thoughtful hearer is encouraged to imitate what is good; or if it records evil of wicked men, the good religious reader or listener is encouraged to avoid all that is sinful and perverse, and to follow what he is in God.”* Bede emphasised the Evangelical and civilizing mission of the church. The history of nations has moral meaning.

**Christ Centred**

The prayer with which Bede closed his *Ecclesiastical History* gives an insight as to the motives of this dedicated disciple of Christ: *“I pray You noble Jesus, that as You graciously granted me joyfully to abide in the Words of Your Knowledge, so You will also of Your bounty grant me to come at length to Yourself, the Light of all wisdom, and to dwell in Your presence forever.”* **Bible Translation**

At the end of Bede's long and productive life, as illness and weakness overcame him, he insisted on completing his translation of John's Gospel into English. Despite sleepless nights and days of weariness, he continued his task, taking every care in comparing the text and preserving its accuracy. He told his scribe: *"I don't want my boys to read a lie, or to work to no purpose after I have gone."*

### **Productive to the End**

On his last day, Bede called his scribe, Wilbert, and told him to write with all possible speed: *"There is still a chapter wanting, be quick with the writing, for I shall not hold out much longer."*

### **Finishing the Race**

He worked till nightfall and when his young scribe had completed the task, Bede rejoiced: *"It is finished!"* He sang the *Gloria Patria*, then breathed his last and entered into the joy of the Lord's presence.

### **Influencing all of Europe**

The Teacher of the Middle Ages continued to influence all of Christendom, not only through his writings, but through one of his star pupils, Egbert, who established schools throughout Europe and became master of Charlemagne's palace school at Aachen.

### **Tumultuous Times**

Bede lived and ministered during tumultuous times with theological, political and geographical conflicts between the Greek Orthodox church in the East and the Western Roman Catholic church, and the rise of Islam which spread through the sword, conquering most of the Byzantine Empire and massacring Christian communities across the whole of North Africa and Spain.

### **BC and AD**

However, instead of becoming entangled in the controversies of his day, Bede dedicated himself to serving God in obscurity, and using his gifts to produce some of the most important works of ecclesiastical literature in history. Every time we write the date, we are using the dating method that Bede established.

*"If you instruct the brethren in these things, you will be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished in the Words of Faith and of the good doctrine which you have carefully followed."* 1 Timothy 4:6



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 8

**KING ALFRED The GREAT - The REFORMER KING**

King Alfred of Wessex spent most of his life fighting against the invading Danes and he is the only king in English history to be known as "*The Great*." His reign has been recognised as one of the most important turning points in English political and ecclesiastical history. He lived through tumultuous times and is recognised as one of the most intelligent, devout, industrious and effective of all medieval monarchs.

**Gifted and Productive**

Alfred was both soldier and scholar, lawmaker and educator, author and Reformer.

**A Love for Literature**

Alfred was born the fourth son of Aethelwulf and Osburh at Wantage in 849. His mother taught him a love for knowledge, and at a young age he responded to her challenge that whichever one of her children first learned to read a beautifully illuminated Saxon book of poetry should have it for his own. Alfred dedicated himself to the task and won the prize. This was characteristic of his entire life's love for literature, hunger for knowledge and passion for advancing English literature.

**Propelled to the Throne**

As the fourth son of the king, it was not expected that Alfred would ever come to rule. However, the death of his brothers in battle against the Danes, propelled Alfred to the throne.

**A Soldier King**

For most of Alfred's 30 years reign he was a soldier king who led his people in a desperate war for survival. Alfred personally commanded in 54 pitched battles, frequently fighting against overwhelming odds. In just the first five months of 870 Alfred fought 9 pitched battles against the Danish Vikings.

**The Battle of Ashdown**

Alfred was defeated at Reading, and a few days later turned this defeat into victory at Ashdown. The Battle of Ashdown in January 878 was critically important. As Winston Churchill described it: "*If the West Saxons had been beaten all England would have sunk into heathen anarchy. Since they were victorious the hope still burned for a civilized Christian existence in this Island. This was the first time the invaders had been beaten in the field.*"

**Fighting for Survival**

There was an inconclusive battle at Basing, followed by a defeat at Marton. It was at this battle that his brother, Aethelred, died and Alfred succeeded to the throne. Shortly after this he fought the Danes to a standstill at Wilton, but the result of the battle was indecisive. Alfred and the men of Wessex had proven too stubborn a foe for easy subjugation so their resistance secured five uneasy years of peace in which to consolidate.

**Rebuilding and Reorganising Resistance**

In the uneasy peace that followed, Alfred reorganised his army and started to rebuild his realm which had suffered under the merciless ravages of the Danish Vikings. Many towns and villages were raided and plundered, London had fallen to the Danes, and Northumbria and East Anglia were firmly under Danish control.

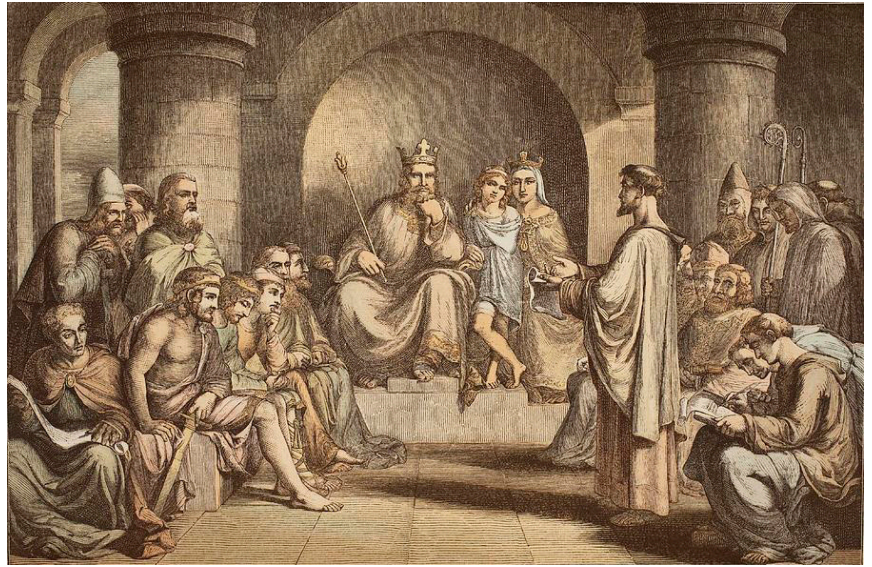
**The Father of the English Navy**

Alfred realised that it was vital to create a navy to defend England effectively from the seafaring Danes. To be safe in an island it was necessary to command the sea. Alfred contracted Friesian seamen to build a fleet superior to any that had previously been seen. For building up the English Navy from very small beginnings, Alfred has justly been called: "*The Father of the English Navy.*"



## Law and Order

Alfred also instilled a great respect for law and order in his kingdom and it was said that a traveller might hang a valuable jewel on a bush by the roadside and nobody would dare touch it. Alfred brought scholars from Europe in order to help educate his people. He was determined to give his nation a stable system of laws based upon God's Law. He blended Mosaic law with the Sermon on the Mount and Germanic customs. Alfred's *Dooms* began with The Ten Commandments, the Laws of Moses, the Golden Rule of Christ, and other Biblical principles



## A New Danish Offensive

In 876 the Danes launched a surprise offensive, seized Wareham, besieged and took Exeter, and rounding by sea, landed in Devon; then besieged Kenwith Castle. When they captured Kenwith they put all the inhabitants to the sword. Alfred was defeated at the battle of Chippenham, and forced to retreat.

## Under the Shadow of Odin

Wessex seemed to be in danger of falling under the shadow of Odin's bird (the great raven which the Danes took as their symbol).

## In Defeat and Retreat

Alfred's defeated forces withdrew to the Isle of Athelney, amidst the forests and marshes of Somerset. It was here that the well-known event of Alfred burning the housewife's cakes took place. Seeking shelter while on the move, Alfred was asked by his host to watch her cakes which were being baked. Absorbed in thought, planning his strategies to counter attack the Danes, Alfred failed to notice the blackened cakes he was meant to be watching and was berated by the irate housewife when she returned. The woman did not know that he was the king!

## The Battle of Edington

After reorganising his forces, Alfred surprised the Danes after force-marching his soldiers at up to 40 miles a day. The Battle of Edington, in Wiltshire, was a decisive victory for Alfred. The area is still known as Slaughterford. On the hillside above this decisive battlefield is a great white horse, which Alfred had cut out to commemorate this major victory.

## The First Vikings Converted to Christianity

Alfred also forced King Guthrum of the Danes, along with 30 of his earls, to be baptized as Christians. These were the first Viking converts to Christianity.

## The First King of England

The Danes withdrew from Alfred's territory until 884 when they attempted another invasion. This time Alfred gained a swift victory, seizing London in 885 and fortifying it strongly. Thereafter, Alfred received the submission of the leaders of the Angles and the Saxons and from several princes of Wales. At this point, Alfred became in fact the first king over all of England.

## Victory on Land and Sea

In 892 a large invasion of Danes was met in battle. Alfred defeated the invaders at Farnham in 893. Again at Thorney and Benfleet, he out-maneuvered and out-fought them. Then, hearing of a second Danish army besieging Exeter, he force-marched his army and drove out the besiegers. At this point, his newly formed English Navy attacked the galleys of the invading Danes at sea and defeated them.

As a large army of Danes marched up the Thames valley, numerous fierce battles ensued. The Danish garrison at Chester was besieged and forced to retreat in 894. To prevent the Danes re-supplying their forces, Alfred obstructed the Thames River, forcing them to withdraw. By 896 he had driven the invaders out of his kingdom.



### **Virtue and Valour**

Through virtue and valour, tactics and tenacity, Alfred had fought the Viking invaders to a standstill and turned them back out of his country. He succeeded in uniting the fragmented dominions of England against a common foe. His Christian courage was an inspiration to all.

### **A Family Man**

Alfred enjoyed over 32 years in marriage to Ealhswith – of the royal family of Mercia. They raised three daughters and two sons. His son Edward and daughter Elhelfeda, “*The Lady of the Mercians*”, together defeated the Danes and liberated all England.



### **Reforming the Nation**

Now, having rescued his country from invasion, he set to work reforming the laws, customs and culture of his people. He personally translated many Latin works into Anglo-Saxon so that the English people could read them. Amongst his many translation projects were *Bede's Ecclesiastical History*, *Orosius' Universal History*, *Gregory's Pastoral Theology*, *Aesop's Fables*, *Boethius' Consolation of Philosophy*, and the Psalms of David. Alfred was also the author of many original titles, including a book against unjust judges.

### **Educating the Nation**

Alfred desired that every Englishman should learn to read, and so he devised a plan for the general education of the people. He donated half of his personal income to church schools. Alfred taught that for a kingdom to be effective, it needed men of prayer, men of war and men of work. Alfred insisted that his nobles learn to read, and learn the great history and heritage of Christendom.

### **God and Government**

King Alfred wrote: “*Local government ought to be synonymous with local Christian virtue, otherwise it becomes local tyranny, local corruption and local iniquity.*”

### **Caring for the Poor and Needy**

Alfred founded two monasteries and numerous schools. His charities were numerous. He received and cared for foreigners and strangers in his court and allocated 1/8<sup>th</sup> of his revenue to the poor and needy.

### **The Defence of the Realm**

He instituted a system of fortified posts (burgs) and established a national militia (the *fyrð*) ensuring that the common people were armed, trained and organised for local defence. He enlarged and improved the English fleet. He also entrenched and enforced the Law of God as the Common Law of England.



### **An Example of Excellence**

Historians have noted that while the world has had other examples of kings who have been great generals or great magistrates, no other sovereign did more in battle, in rule making, in forming and developing the literature and education of their people, as well as working for the spiritual benefit of both subjects and enemies.

### **Converting His Enemies**

Winston Churchill marveled that Alfred should have wished “*to convert these savage foes... This sublime power to rise above the whole force of circumstances, to remain unbiased by the extremes of victory or defeat, to persevere in the teeth of disaster; to greet returning fortune with a cool eye, to have faith in men after repeated betrayals, raises Alfred far above the turmoil of barbaric wars to his pinnacle of deathless victory.*”

### An Amazing Life

Edmund Burke wrote of Alfred: *“One cannot help being amazed that a prince who lived in such turbulent times, who commanded personally in 54 pitched battles, who had so disordered a province to regulate, who was not only a legislator but a judge, and who was continually superintending his armies, his navies, the traffic of his kingdom, his revenues and the conduct of all his officers, could have bestowed so much of his time on religious exercises and speculative knowledge, but the exertion of all his faculties and virtues seems to have given mutual strength to all of them.”*

### A Heritage of Faith and Freedom

King Alfred stands out as the model king, the perfect knight, a dedicated Christian, a Protestant before Protestantism, soldier and scholar, law maker and educator, author and Reformer. He successfully fought against spiritual decay within the English church as well as against the Viking invaders, creating the first English Navy, authored English literature, ensured the survival of Christianity in England, and began the great process of converting the bloodthirsty Viking invaders to Christianity.

*“Blessed be the Lord my Rock, who trains my hands for war, and my fingers for battle – my loving-kindness and my fortress, my high tower and my Deliverer, my shield and the One in whom I take refuge, Who subdues the people under me... Stretch out Your hand from above; rescue me and deliver me out of great waters, from the hand of foreigners... the One who gives salvation to kings, who delivers David His servant from the deadly sword... Happy are the people whose God is the Lord!”* Psalm 144



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 9

### HOW The VIKINGS Were WON to CHRIST

The Scandinavians were the last great group of Teutonic people to abandon heathenism and embrace Christianity. The Viking marauders from the pagan North wreaked havoc throughout Northern and Western Europe. Throughout the 9<sup>th</sup> and 10<sup>th</sup> centuries Vikings raided, killed and plundered. They also established strong Viking settlements in Normandy, England, Scotland, Ireland, Iceland, Greenland, throughout the Baltic and in Russia.

#### Terror from the North

Alcuin wrote of the shocking Viking raid on the monastery at Lindesfarne in AD 793: “Never before has such terror appeared in Britain as we have now suffered from a pagan race. Nor was it thought possible that such an inroad from the sea could be made. Behold, the Church of Saint Cuthbert splattered with the blood of the priests of God, despoiled of all its ornaments. A place more venerable than all in Britain has fallen prey to pagans.”

#### The Fury of the Northmen

Soon a new prayer was added to the church liturgy: “From the fury of the Northmen, O Lord, deliver us!”

#### Conversion

At the time, probably nobody could have predicted that the violent Vikings would be conquered by the Prince of Peace and become some of the most enthusiastic missionaries for the advance of Christianity.

#### The Viking Era

The Viking era is normally dated from the Lindesfarne raid of AD 793 to the battle of Hastings of AD 1066.

#### Impacting Culture

Although the Vikings were famous for their hit and run raids, many Vikings actually settled in the British Isles and deeply influenced English culture. The fact that we have a seven day week is due to the Biblical account that God created the world in six days and rested on the seventh. However, the days of the week were originally named by the Romans after the seven main celestial planets: The Sun, Moon, Mars, Mercury, Jupiter, Venus and Saturn. The Anglo Saxons replaced four of these with the names of Viking deities: Tuesday is named after the Viking war god, Tyr (or Tiw); Wednesday after the Viking war god Wodin (Odin); Thursday is named after the Viking god of war, Thor; and Friday after the Viking fertility goddess Frigg (Frey).

#### Viking Words

Many English words have their roots in Scandinavian speech including: anger, die, scant, ugly, loose, wrong, low, sky, take, window, husband, happy, thrive, ill, beer and anchor. The word berserk is actually from the name of a Viking soldier.

#### Ansgar –The Apostle of the North

When the Vikings were the terror of Europe God placed a great missionary burden on young Ansgar. With his own money Ansgar redeemed several Danish youths who were slaves. He educated them to be his co-workers in bringing the Gospel to their countrymen.

#### Denmark

Harold, King of Denmark, had been driven from his throne and had sought refuge at the court of Louis I, King of the Franks. While at Louis’s court King Harold heard the Gospel and turned to Christ, submitting himself to be baptised. On the king’s return to Denmark, Ansgar eagerly joined the king to preach the Gospel to the Danes. At Hedeby Ansgar built a small wooden church, but persecution forced him to flee the country.

#### Sweden

Ansgar responded to a request from King Bjorn of Sweden. This was early in the 9<sup>th</sup> century when the Vikings were



raiding, plundering and burning the coastal cities of Northern and Western Europe. Ansgar narrowly escaped with his life when Norsemen burned the churches and monasteries in Hamburg. With two co-workers Ansgar crossed the Baltic Sea to begin ministering in Sweden. On the way the vessel was plundered by pirates and they arrived destitute in Sweden. King Bjorn welcomed the Christians to Sweden and the first church was built in the country.

### **Stronger than Thor**

At an assembly of the people a question was debated as to whether the missionaries should be allowed to continue to preach Christ and so invite the anger of the old Viking gods. At a critical part in the discussions, an old Viking stood up and declared with great force that it was clear that the Christian God was stronger than Thor. This decided the matter and the missionaries received freedom to continue to preach the Gospel in Sweden.

### **God's Judgment**

More than any previous invasions and crises faced by the Christian church, the Viking raids wrought desolation throughout the western Christendom. The Vikings laid waste to monasteries and churches, shaking the churches to their foundations. A decline and decay in faith and morals had set in before the Viking invasions and many saw the fury of the Norsemen as a judgment of God upon a backslidden, and often apostate, church.

### **Resistance in Wessex**

Churches and monasteries were destroyed, clergy and monks were slain, church buildings lay vacant until, in the South of England the West Saxons were rallied by King Alfred the Great to steadfastly resist, and ultimately defeat, the great Danish invasion.

### **Conversion of the Vikings**

In 878, after King Alfred defeated the Danish army at Ashdown, he required its King Guthrum, and 30 other of his leaders, to be baptised as Christians. In 882 another Viking leader in the lower Rhine region abandoned heathenism and embraced Christianity receiving baptism in the Name of Lord Jesus Christ. Duke Rollo of the Vikings, and some of his followers, received baptism and created the Duchy of Normandy.

### **Impressed by Christ**

The ethics of Christianity were so radically different to traditional Viking culture that it took centuries for the Scandinavian people to be thoroughly evangelised and disciplined. One of the chief attractions was the conviction that Christ is a mighty Victor who has risen triumphant over death. The power of Christ impressed the hardened Viking warriors. In Norway the king commanded his people to be converted to Christ or be prepared to die. However, in Denmark and Sweden the Vikings were converted by persuasion not force. Pioneer missionaries Willibrord and Liudger attempted to take the Gospel to the Vikings, but with little visible success initially.

### **Ansgar – Missionary to the Vikings**

It remained for Ansgar, born of Saxon parents in the North West of France in 801, to succeed where others had failed. Ansgar was described as a sensitive child who led a devout life. He experienced visions and dreams and possessed “a combination of humility, of self-forgetfulness, and of undaunted courage and energetic initiative.”

### **Winning Sweden to Christ**

King Harold of Denmark was baptised in 826 in Mainz. Some of the first pagans in Sweden to request baptism included the leader of Birka, an Island in Lake Malar, not far from the present capital Stockholm. Despite serious reverses, violence and destruction of churches, Ansgar did not give up, he persevered and soon Danish missionaries were being sent to establish churches in Sweden. Ansgar's faithful work was continued by his disciple, Rimbert, who ministered both amongst the Danes and the Swedes. Rimbert was succeeded by Adalgar.

### **Opposition and Persecution**

Early in the 10<sup>th</sup> century, King Gorm of Denmark, a determined enemy of Christianity, attempted to banish Christianity from his realm. Many ministers and missionaries were martyred, numerous churches burned to the ground.

### **Saxons Champion the Christian Cause**

As the Saxons grew in strength they became champions of the Christian cause. When Henry became King of the Germans in 919 he sponsored numerous missionary outreaches to the Danes. After his victory over the Danes in 934, King Henry compelled their rulers to accept Christianity. Unni was encouraged by the king to renew the work of Ansgar. Gorm's successor King Harold looked with favour upon Unni's attempts to reassemble the scattered remnants of Christian communities on the Danish Isles and to bring in ministers to rebuild these congregations.



## **Reform and Revival**

King Henry's son, Otto the Great, became king in 936 and in 962 was crowned emperor of the Holy Roman Empire. Under royal favour the churches experienced a wave of reform with a tremendous revival of devotion and enthusiasm. King Harold of Denmark extended his realm to become overlord of Norway. As he himself was baptised he encourage the spread of Christianity throughout his realms.

## **Growth Despite Opposition**

Harold's son, Sweyn, attempted to bring about a pagan rebellion against his father who died in the struggle (986). Sweyn severely persecuted Christians and repeatedly invaded England where he died in 1014. In Sweden a pagan King, Eric, arose, hostile to Christianity. Yet the church continued to grow. The missionary Poppo won many thousands to the Christian faith in Denmark. Odinkar was a missionary from Denmark who strengthened the Gospel work in Sweden.

## **King Canute Sponsors Missions in England and Denmark**

Under King Canute the church was firmly established in Denmark. Canute later became king of all England. Under his support missionaries from Germany established more churches in Denmark. He commanded his subjects to learn The Lord's Prayer and to be faithful in Communion with the Lord. The church in Denmark grew and deepened with strong ties to the Saxon churches in Germany and England.

## **Missions to Norway**

The conversion of the Vikings in Norway was far more stormy than that of Denmark. Throughout the 10<sup>th</sup> century Saxon missionaries from England laboured throughout Denmark establishing many mission stations and congregations. From the time of King Alfred the Great the revived churches in England evidenced a dynamic vitality in missions to the Vikings.

## **The Kingdom of Norway**

The Norwegian kingdom was the creation of Harald Haarfager (fair hair) who died in 933. By much combat he had established himself as the overruler of all Norway. His sons Eric Bloodaxe and Haakon the Good struggled over the succession. Haakon had been sent to England to study and there had been converted, baptised and discipled as a Christian. By 935 the young, tall, handsome and athletic Haakon had established his supremacy through combat and was accepted as king of all Norway.

## **Royal Mission to Win the Vikings**

Haakon then attempted to win his people to the Christian faith. Most of his immediate court were soon baptised. Later he sent to England for missionaries and began to build churches in Norway. By the year 950 after he had been reigning 15 years, Haakon proposed to the assembly of landowners that they adopt Christianity. Most of the landowners responded with great hostility and vehemently refused to abandon the old pagan ways. They began to place great pressure on the king to compromise and participate in their pagan sacrifices. Facing open rebellion King Haakon, very reluctantly, ate some of the meat in their ceremonial feast organised by his landowners. Later, after been wounded in battle, on his death bed, in 961, Haakon declared his great remorse over that compromise and his desire to do penance for his sins.

## **A Rocky Road and Reverses**

His nephew, Harold Graafell, succeeded to the throne of Norway. While not as enthusiastic a Christian as Haakon, Harold Graafell did pull down pagan temples wherever he went. However misrule and bad seasons led much of the people to resent the faith which he had violently championed. In 970 Harold Graafell was lured to Denmark and killed. King Harold Bluetooth of Denmark then made himself the overlord of Norway and encouraged the spread of Christianity there.

## **Olaf Trygvesson**

Olaf Trygvesson was the son of the King of Norway. His great grandfather, Harald Haarfager (Fair-hair), had initially established the Kingdom of Norway. When Olaf's father was murdered in 968, Olaf fled the country with his mother. Vikings captured their ship and sold the boy into slavery. Olaf ended up in the court of Russia's Tsar Vladimir I, where he became a favourite of the Queen. When Olaf was just twelve years old, the Tsar put a dozen ships under his command and sent him off into battle.

## **A Viking without Equal**

By the time he was twenty one years old, Olaf Trygvesson was renowned as the ultimate Viking, tall, strong, handsome, and unequalled in martial skill. He led a huge army of Swedish Vikings, in a fleet of almost ninety ships to loot Holland. After devastating the Dutch, he went to fight the French and left a massive amount of death and destruction wherever he went.



### **Extortion in England**

His next target was England where, after the battle of Maldon, near the mouth of the Thames, he forced the Anglo Saxon King, Ethelred the Unready, to pay a tribute of 10,000 pounds of silver. After this he moved North plundering Northumberland and Scotland. He attacked the Hebrides and the Isle of Man. He conducted raids of Ireland, Wales, Cornwall, and France again. With a fleet of over ninety-four ships he again attacked England, killing and looting wildly until King Ethelred offered him a further 22,000 pounds.

### **Seeking Sorcery**

Off the coast of Cornwall Olaf heard of a local fortuneteller who was renowned to have a gift of prophecy. Olaf rowed to the remote rocky retreat and asked the prophet if he could foresee anything in his future.

### **A Word of Prophecy**

“Thou wilt become a renowned king and do celebrated deeds. And that thou not doubt the truth of this answer, listen to this ...” The old man predicted that Olaf

would soon suffer a mutiny from his men, in which he would be wounded and carried to his ship on his oblong shield. After seven days he would recover and he would be baptised as a Christian. Many men wilt thou bring to faith and baptism, and both to thy own and others’ good.”

### **Mutiny**

When the mutiny, wounding and recovery happened, precisely as the hermit had predicted, Olaf sought the old man again to enquire how he could possess such knowledge. The man humbly confessed: “The God of the Christians has blessed me.”

### **Conversion**

When King Ethelred heard of the conversion and baptism of his tormentor, King Olaf, he sent his bishop and officials to present him with royal gifts and to offer Christian fellowship.

### **Confronting Apostasy**

In 995, news from Norway reached Olaf that the leader Earl Haakon, the very man who had murdered Olaf’s father, had caused an uproar in the land by demanding the daughters of respected leaders of the community. Although Earl Haakon had originally accepted Christianity, under threat from the German Emperor Otto, he had since reverted to heathenism, restoring many heathen temples and persecuting Christians. Earl Haakon the Apostate had even gone so far as to offer his best horses and his youngest son, a seventeen year old, as sacrifices to a heathen goddess.

### **For the Love of Justice**

It was at this opportune time that Olaf, the great grandson of King Harald Haarfager, determined to leave England and avenge the death of his father, the exile of his mother, the slavery of his youth and to end the pagan misrule of Earl Haakon.

### **Norway for Christ**

With just five ships Olaf landed in Norway and claimed it for Christ. Soon word reached him that Earl Haakon had angered two landowners by attempting to seize their wives for himself. The growing resistance was greatly strengthened when word reached them that Olaf Trygvesson was on his way to claim the throne and deal with Haakon. Olaf was renowned as the Viking warrior without parallel. His height, strength, athletic stature, superior skills in all the warrior arts, his boldness and ruthlessness were renowned throughout the land. Earl Haakon the Apostate fled and hid in a pit beneath a pig sty, where he was killed by his slave. At a national assembly Olaf was proclaimed King of all Norway. He then travelled throughout the land consolidating his rule and attempting to Christianise the people.

### **Repent or Perish**

Many of his relatives became his first converts and he appointed them as “Christ’s captains.” “I shall make you great and mighty men for doing this work. All Norway must be Christian or die.”

### **Greater than Thor and Odin**

The scattered settlements on the West and East shores of the Oslofjord readily accepted baptism, but the people in the Northern part of the Vic resisted the Gospel. King Olaf challenged the followers of Thor and Odin to combat and by the end of the year he had convinced everyone that Christ was greater than Thor and Odin.



### **Conversion by Contest and Combat**

As King Olaf moved to the Western and Northern fjords of Norway he challenged the heathen to swimming races, archery contests and mortal combat. Olaf's message was to the point: Repent or die! Those who chose to fight were quickly defeated by Olaf's superior strength and skill.

### **War against Heathenism**

King Olaf declared that the heathen gods were demons. The powers behind the idols were evil spirits. All sorcerers, and those who promoted idolatry and heathenism, were to be banished.

Those wizards and priests who resisted were killed and some other incorrigibles were marooned on a rock far off-shore at low tide.

### **Heathen Sacrifice**

At Trondheim, which had been the stronghold of the late heathen King Earl Haakon, Olaf burned the heathen temples and destroyed the idols. The local chiefs rose in rebellion against him. Olaf mustered a large army, and with thirty ships anchored in the River Nid, Olaf invited the local chiefs to a feast where he indicated that he would be willing to perform a heathen sacrifice. When the chiefs were gathered together, Olaf declared: "If I am to return to making heathen sacrifices then I will make the greatest sacrifice of all. I will not sacrifice slaves but men. I will sacrifice the greatest of men only." Olaf named the most prominent leaders of the opposition.

### **Baptism or Battle**

As the horrified heathen howled in protest, Olaf gave them a straight challenge: "Baptism or Battle". He held eleven leaders hostage until everyone was baptised. At nearby Trondheim the local Chief Ironbeard demanded that the king offer sacrifices, as other kings before him had done. Olaf said he would make a sacrifice, walked into the temple and smashed the idol of Thor to pieces with his axe. He then killed Ironbeard and persuaded the rest of the village to abandon their heathen ways and to be baptised as Christians.

### **Defeating all Resistance**

Further North Olaf faced the strong opposition of Chief Raud the Strong. Raud mobilised his army and a fierce sea battle was fought. Olaf's forces overwhelmed Raud's rebels. Raud escaped to take refuge in an island hide-out in Saltenfjord. The narrow channel to the fjord was turbulent and for a week no ship could enter. As Raud attempted to mobilise his witchcraft against the king, Olaf summoned his bishop to read the Gospels and pray. By some miracle his ships managed to negotiate the treacherous and turbulent rocky entrance to the fjord. Soon Raud was apprehended and brought before the king who ordered him to submit to Christ. "I will not take your property from you but instead will be your friend, if you make yourself worthy to be so." When Raud rejected this offer, with vile blasphemies, Olaf had his men force an adder down his throat.

### **Crusade Completed**

This was the last resistance to Olaf's crusade to eradicate paganism in Norway. Now he focused on winning Iceland and Greenland to Christ. But before he could do so, in the year 1000, King Olaf was killed in the spectacular sea battle of Svold. The pagan queen Sigrid the Haughty, was furious that Olaf had spurned her advances. She mobilised two pagan kings to trap Olaf off the coast of Denmark. Olaf died as courageously as he had lived, rejoicing that he had succeeded in his mission to convince the Vikings of Norway to abandon heathenism, to destroy their idols and to commit to following the Christian Faith.

### **Olaf Haraldsson**

Another prominent Norwegian king who consolidated the Christian Faith in Norway was Olaf Haraldsson. In 1007, when he was just twelve years old, Olaf Haraldsson was sent out as a sea king to raid Sweden. Later, in Denmark, Olaf joined forces with Thorkel the Tall. They together launched raids on Jutland, Freisia, Holland and England. They tormented King Ethelred the Unready, who had already suffered much at the hands of the earlier Olaf Trygvesson. In 1009, Olaf and Thorkel attacked London and East Anglia. They martyred the archbishop of Canterbury and plundered the Cathedral. Thereafter Olaf raided Brittany, France and Spain.

### **Transformed**

Then Olaf had a traumatic spiritual experience and he saw a terrifying vision of Christ. Olaf abandoned his heathen ways and committed to being a Christian. In 1015 he arrived in Norway and proclaimed himself king. He immediately proclaimed the Christian Faith throughout Norway and built numerous churches. Olaf became known as a great lawgiver. With Bishop Grimkell he established the Moster Law. While most of Norway accepted this, Trondelag continued with their pagan practices and incurred the wrath of King Olaf, who descended on the area fining or executing offenders.

### Smashing Idols

At Gulbrandsdal, local pagans confronted him with their huge wooden idol of Thor. Olaf distracted them by drawing their attention to the bright sunrise behind them as a herald of his God. As his enemies turned to face the sunrise, one of Olaf's warriors smashed the idol of Thor and revealed that its wood was rotten. As gold spilled out, large rats, which had evidently been living off the food offerings, scattered. King Olaf pointed out that the gold they had wasted on offerings to Thor's rotten idol would look far better as jewelry on their wives and daughters.

### Winning Enemies to Christ

This demonstration of Christ's superiority over Thor convinced the locals to be baptised. As a contemporary report noted: "They who met as enemies, parted as friends."

### Ending Piracy and Plunder

For twelve years King Olaf ruled Norway and saw that Iceland and the Faeroe Islands were discipled in Christianity. Most unpopularly of all he outlawed the Viking raids, which had been considered an essential way of life.

### A Warrior to the End

It was at this point that Denmark attempted to regain control over their previous colony and Olaf was forced to flee. In 1030 Olaf attempted to liberate his country from the Danes. At the battle of Stiklestad, heavily outnumbered, more than three to one, Olaf inspired his men with a battle cry: "Fram, Fram. Kristsmenn, Kraossmenn, Konungsmenn!" (On. On. Christ's men, Cross men, kings' men!) Olaf and his men fought boldly and bravely, but were overwhelmed by superior numbers.

### Success and Sainthood

As Danish taxes and oppression intensified the Vikings grew to regret their betrayal of King Olaf. Within a year Olaf was popularly proclaimed a Saint and his remains enshrined in Saint Clement. What he had failed to do in life, he achieved in death, to unite and inspire his people to win his country's freedom from Denmark and to be united as an independent Christian kingdom. The cathedral in York was dedicated to Saint Olaf. Olaf was regarded by many medieval leaders as an example of the ideal ruler. A church in Constantinople was dedicated to the memory of King Olaf and the sword that he had wielded at the battle of Stiklestad was hung over the high altar. Olaf is the last Western saint to be accepted by the Eastern Orthodox Church.



### The Vikings Surrender to Christ

And so, by a combination of pioneer missionary work, royal favour and combat the ferocious Vikings were convinced to abandon heathenism, destroy their idols, abandon their aggression, cease their violent raids, submit to baptism and commit to following the Christian Faith.

### Christ Triumphant

The Vikings came to be convinced that the Christian God is more powerful than all other gods. They saw how He answered the prayers of the Christians. They witnessed miracles. They saw how Christian kings and missionaries were able to destroy idols

and defy the heathen gods and taboos - without suffering any ill effects. They saw that their pagan gods were powerless before the all powerful Jesus Christ. Christ was honored and worshiped as the mighty Warrior who had triumphed over all the powers of death, hell and the grave. He is the risen ascended Christ, King of kings and Lord of lords, with all other authorities in subjection to Him. ***"Yes, all kings shall fall down before Him; all nations shall serve Him."*** Psalm 72:11

### Scandinavia for Christ

The prominence of the Cross in every Scandinavian flag serves as a dramatic testimony to the conversion of the Vikings.

**Frontline Fellowship** P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480

admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org

### For further reading:

*A History of the Expansion of Christianity*, by Kenneth Scott Latourette, 1938, Harper and Row.

*The Hammer and the Cross*, by Michael Scott Rohan and Allan J. Scott, 1980, Alder.

*The Christianisation of Scandinavia*, edited by Birgit and Peter Sawyer and Ian Wood, 1987, Viktoria Bokforlag.

*The Last Apocalypse*, by James Reston, 1998, Doubleday.

*The Barbarian Conversion*, by Henry Holt, 1997.

*Medieval Scandinavia*, by Brigit and Peter Sawyer, 1993, University of Minnesota.





## Chapter 10

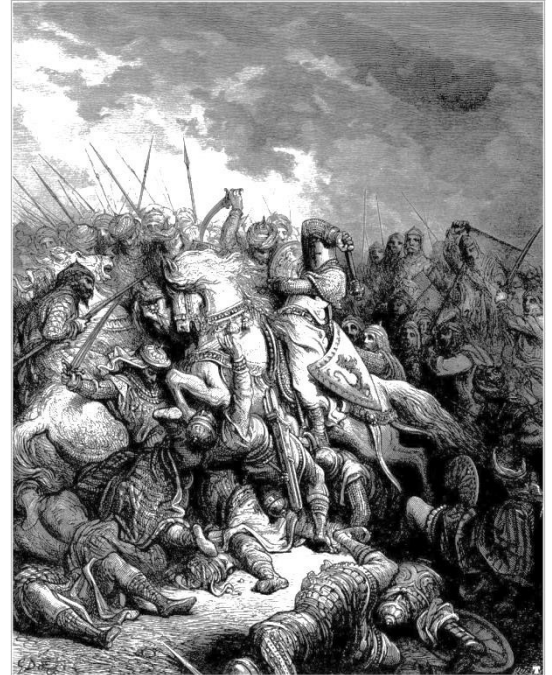
**The CRUSADES vs JIHAD**

Back in 1999 while our mission was being bombed by the National Islamic Front government in Sudan, fellow missionaries were organising “*Reconciliation Walks*” to the Middle East to apologise for “*The Crusades*”. At the time, as our church services were under aerial and artillery bombardment by Jihadists, this seemed rather bizarre. Therefore I undertook a study of the Crusades and Jihad.

**Anin Maalouf in “The Crusades Through Arab Eyes” claims that the Crusaders conquest of Jerusalem in 1099 was “The starting point of a millennial hostility between Islam and the West.” Islamic scholar John Esposito blames the Crusades for disrupting “Five centuries of peaceful coexistence.” (“Islam: The Straight Path” OUP)**

**What Preceded The Crusades?**

However the Crusades only started after five centuries of Islamic Jihad had conquered and annihilated, or forcibly converted, over two thirds of what had formerly been the Christian world. Shortly after the Islamic conquest of Jerusalem, in 638, Christian pilgrims were harassed, massacred, and early in the 8<sup>th</sup> Century, 60 Christian pilgrims from Amoriem were crucified.



The Muslim governor of Caesarea seized a group of pilgrims from Iconium and had them all executed. Muslims extorted ransom money from Pilgrims, and threatened to ransack the most holy churches in Christendom such as the Church of the Resurrection - if they didn't pay exorbitant taxes. In the 8<sup>th</sup> Century a Muslim ruler banned all displays of the Cross in Jerusalem. He also increased the penalty tax (*Jizya*) and forbade Christians to engage in any religious instruction, even of their own children! In 772, the Caliph al Mansur ordered the hands of all Christians and Jews in Jerusalem to be branded.

In 789, Muslims beheaded a monk in Bethlehem, plundering the monastery and slaughtering many more Christians. In 923, a new wave of destruction of churches was launched by the Muslim rulers. In 937, Muslims went on a rampage in Jerusalem on Palm Sunday plundering and destroying the Church of Calvary and the Church of the Resurrection.

In 1004 the Fatimid Caliph Abu Ali al-Mansur al-Hakim unleashed a violent wave of church burning and destruction, confiscation of Christian property, and ferocious slaughter of both Christians and Jews. Over the next ten years, **30,000 churches were destroyed** and vast numbers of Believers were forcibly converted or killed.

In 1009, Al-Hakim ordered that the most holy churches in Christendom – the Church of the Holy Sepulchre and the Church of the Resurrection in Jerusalem - be destroyed. He heaped humiliating and burdensome decrees upon Christians and Jews forcing Christians to wear heavy crosses around their necks, and Jews to have blocks of wood in the shape of a calf around their necks. Ultimately, he ordered Christians and Jews to either accept Islam or flee his areas of control.

Christians remained in a precarious position and under threat throughout the Middle East. When the Seljuk Turks swept into Jerusalem in 1077 they murdered over three thousand people, including many Christians. It was at this point that the Christian Emperor of Byzantium, Alexius I, appealed for help to the Western churches.

Pope Urban II challenged the knights of Europe at the Council of Clermont in 1095: “*The Turks and Arabs have attacked our brethren in the East and have conquered the territory of Romania (the Greek Empire) as far as the shore of the Mediterranean and the Hellespont...have occupied more and more of the lands of those Christians and have overcome them in seven battles. They have killed and captured many and have destroyed the churches and devastated the Empire. If you continue to permit them to continue thus for a while with impunity, the faithful of God will be much more widely attacked by them. On this account I...persuade all people of whatever rank, foot soldiers and knights, poor and rich, to carry aid promptly to those Christians...*”

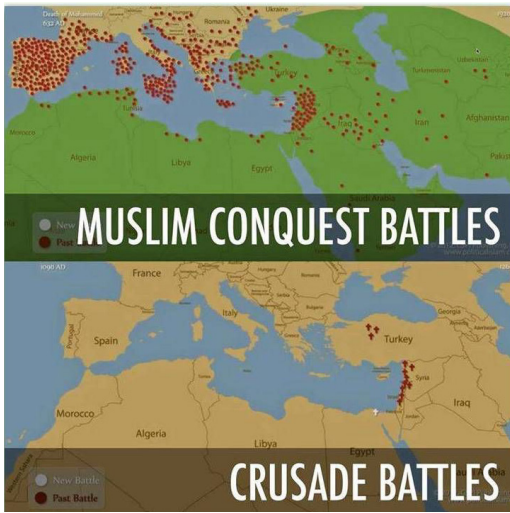
Nowhere was the call for the launch of the Crusades talking about either conquest or conversion, they were merely to remove the Islamic invaders from the lands that had previously been Christian, to restore religious freedom to the Holy Lands.



## Myths and Misconceptions

The politically correct dogma that the Crusades were unprovoked, imperialist actions against the peaceful, indigenous Muslim population is simply not accurate. Such propaganda reflects a hostility for Western civilization, and often against Christianity itself, rather than any actual historical research.

Similarly, the characterization of the Crusaders as greedy for loot, only out for personal gain, is simply out of touch with reality. Those who participated in the Crusades saw it as an act of sacrifice rather than of profit. The Crusades were in fact prohibitively expensive. Many Crusaders had to sell their property to raise money for the long journey to the Holy Land and knew that their chances of returning alive were slight. Most who did manage to survive and return came back with nothing material to show for their efforts.



Similarly, the modern myth that the Crusaders attempted to forcibly convert Muslims to Christianity is a politically motivated fantasy. Search as one might through the writings and records of the Crusaders, one will not find any mention of Crusaders seeking to forcibly convert the Saracens or the Turks. The Crusaders saw themselves as Pilgrims seeking to recapture and liberate Christian lands from vicious invaders.

Anin Maalouf in *The Crusades Through Arab Eyes*, reports the observations of Spanish Muslim Ibn Jubayr who traversed the Mediterranean on his way to Mecca in the early 1180's and found that the Muslims were far better off in those lands controlled by the Crusaders than they were in Muslim ruled lands. And that Muslims preferred to live in the Crusader realms as those lands were more orderly and better managed.

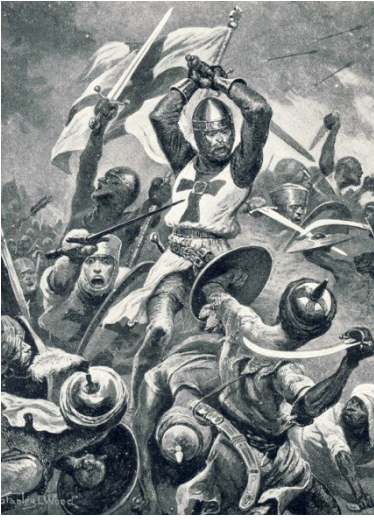
Ibn Jubayr wrote: *"Whose lands were efficiently cultivated. The inhabitants were all Muslims. They live in comfort with the Franks – may God preserve them from temptation! Their dwellings belong to them and all their property is unmolested. All their regions, patrolled by the Crusaders in Syria are subject to the same system: The land that remains, the villages and farms, have remained in the hands of the Muslims. Now, doubt invests the hearts of a great number of these men when they compare their lot to that of their brothers living in Muslim territories. Indeed, the latter suffer from the injustices of their co-religionists, whereas the Franks act with equity."*

### The Merciful Saladin

The presentation of Muslim commanders such as Saladin as merciful and magnanimous is a myth. When Saladin captured the Crusaders at Hattin on 4 July 1187, he ordered the mass execution of all the Christians: *"They should be beheaded in accordance with Quran 47:4 'When you meet the unbelievers on the battlefield, strike their necks'"* Saladin's secretary Imad reported, *"With him were a whole band of scholars and Sufis and a certain number of devout men and aesthetics; each begged to be allowed to kill one of them and drew their swords and rolled back their sleeves. Saladin, his face joyful, was sitting on his dais; the unbelievers showed black despair."*







In 1148, the Muslim Commander Nur ed-Din ordered the slaughter of every Christian in Aleppo. In 1268, when Mamluk Sultan Baybars seized Antioch, he ensured that all the men were slaughtered, the women sold into slavery, the crosses in every church smashed, the Bibles torn and burned, the graves of Christians desecrated, every monk, priest and deacon was dragged to the altar and had their throats slit where a mass had previously been celebrated, the Church of Saint Paul and the Cathedral of Saint Peter were destroyed and the bodies of the Christians burned.

When on 29 May 1453, the greatest city in the world of that time, Constantinople, was conquered by the Jihadists, the Muslims “*slew everyone that they met in the streets, men, women and children without discrimination. The blood ran in rivers down the steep streets from the heights of Petra toward the golden horn*”. The Muslim soldiers even entered the Hagia Sophia, and slaughtered thousands of Christians worshipping in what was the largest church in the world at that time.

### **Were The Crusades a Failure?**

The constant depiction of the Crusades as a failure is not justified by the historical record. The Crusades succeeded in seizing the initiative, throwing the Muslim invaders onto the defensive, for the first time after five centuries of attack. The Crusaders bought Europe time – centuries in fact.

**At a critical time, the Crusades united a divided Europe, and threw the Muslim invaders back, bringing a peace and security to Europe that had not been known for centuries. As a result of the tremendous sacrifices of the Crusaders, Christian Europe experienced Spiritual Revival and Biblical Reformation which inspired a great resurgence of learning, scientific experimentation, technological advancement, and movements that led to greater prosperity and freedoms than had ever been known in all of history.**

For a picture of what Europe might be like today had Islam succeeded in conquering it, one can look at the previously Christian civilisations of Egypt and what is today called Turkey. The Copts in Egypt now make up just 10% of the total Egyptian population, and are severely oppressed. What is today called Turkey was once the vibrant Christian Byzantine Empire, the economic and military superpower of its day. Today the Christian civilization which had flourished there for a thousand years has all but been extinguished. The last Christian city in Asia, Smyrna, was massacred by the Turkish Army in 1922.

The popular misconceptions about the crusades are that these were aggressive wars of expansion fought by religious fanatics in order to evict Muslims from their homeland, and force conversions to Christianity. However the historical record does not support those assertions.

### **A Reaction To Jihad**

**The crusaders were reacting to over four centuries of relentless Islamic Jihad, which had wiped out over 50% of all the Christians in the world and conquered over 60% of all the Christian lands on earth – before the crusades even began.** Many of the towns liberated by the crusaders were still over 90% Christian when the crusaders arrived. The Middle East was the birthplace of the Christian Church. It was the Christians who had been conquered and oppressed by the Seljuk Turks. So many of the towns in the Middle East welcomed the crusaders as liberators.

Far from the crusaders being the aggressors, it was the Muslim armies which had spread Islam from Saudi Arabia across the whole of Christian North Africa into Spain and even France within the first century after the death of Muhammad. Muslim armies sacked and slaughtered their way across some of the greatest Christian cities in the world, including Alexandria, Carthage, Antioch and Constantinople. **These Muslim invaders destroyed over 3,200 Christian churches just in the first 100 years of Islam.**

### **Defensive Wars**

As Professor Thomas Madden in *The Real History of the Crusades* points out: “*The crusades to the East were in every way defensive wars. They were a direct response to Muslim aggression – an attempt to turn back, or defend against, Muslim conquests of Christian lands. Christians in the 11th Century were not paranoid fanatics. Muslims really were gunning for them...Islam was born in war and grew the same way. From the time of Muhammad, the means of Muslim expansion was always by the sword...Christianity was the dominant religion of power and wealth...The Christian world therefore was a prime target for the earliest Caliphas and it would remain so for Muslim leaders for the next thousand years...The crusades...were but a response to more than four centuries of conquests in which Muslims had already captured over two thirds of the Christian world.*”



### Thinking The Unthinkable

As the London Telegraph pointed out: *“A more realistic view of history requires less retrospective fantasy and more brain work. It means forcing your head around to see what motivated men and women centuries ago. Try to think the unthinkable – that the Crusaders were right, and that we should be grateful to them.”*

**Without the Crusades it is questionable whether Europe or American would even exist.**

### Christian Love And Self Sacrifice

Professor Jonathan Riley-Smith explains that crusading was *“an act of love”* for one’s neighbour. An act of mercy to right a terrible wrong. As one church leader wrote to the Knights Templar: *“You carry out in deeds the words of the Gospel, ‘greater love than this hath no man, than that he lay down his life for his friends’.”*

Professor Riley-Smith points out that the goals of the crusades were firstly to rescue the Christians of the East: *“Many thousands of Christians are bound in slavery and imprisoned by the Muslims and tortured with innumerable torments.”* And secondly the liberation of Jerusalem and other places made holy by the life of Christ.

The Medieval crusaders saw themselves as pilgrims, restoring to the Lord Jesus Christ His property. *“The Crusaders conquest of Jerusalem, therefore, was not colonialism, but an act of restoration and an open declaration of one’s love of God...It is often assumed that the central goal of the crusades was forced conversion of the Muslim world. Nothing could be further from the truth. From the perspective of Medieval Christians, Muslims were the enemies of Christ and His Church. It was the Crusaders’ task to defeat and defend against them. That was all. Muslims who lived in crusader won territories were generally allowed to retain their property and livelihood and always their religion.”*

### Against All Odds

When we think about the Middle Ages, we inevitably view Europe in the light of what it became rather than what it was. The fact is that the superpower of the Medieval world was Islam, not Christendom. The crusades were a battle against all odds with impossibly long lines of supply and crippling inadequate logistics. It was a David against Goliath enterprise from the beginning. The chances of success for the first crusade were highly improbable. They had no leader, no chain of command, no supply lines and no detailed strategy. The first crusade consisted simply of thousands of dedicated warriors marching deep into enemy territory, thousands of kilometres from home. Many of them died of starvation, disease and wounds. It was a rough campaign that always was on the brink of disaster.

*“Yet it was miraculously successful. By 1098, the Crusaders had liberated Nicea and Antioch to Christian rule. And in July 1099 they re-conquered Jerusalem and began to rebuild a Christian state in Palestine.”*



### A Judgement of God

When Jerusalem fell to Saladin in 1187, Christians across Europe perceived that God was punishing them for their sins. Numerous lay movements sprang up throughout Europe dedicated to purifying Christian society so that it may become worthy of victory in the East.

Professor Madden, of St. Lewis University and the author of *A Concise History of the Crusades*, has observed: *“From the safe distance of many centuries, it is easy enough to scowl in disgust at the crusades. Religion, after all, is nothing to fight wars over. But we should be mindful that our Medieval ancestors would have been equally disgusted by our infinitely more*

*destructive wars fought in the names of political ideologies...Whether we admire the Crusaders or not, it is a fact that the world we know today would not exist without their efforts. The ancient faith of Christianity, with its respect for women and antipathy toward slavery, not only survived but flourished. Without the crusades, it might have followed Zoroastrianism, another of Islam’s rivals, into extinction.”* **But for the crusades Europe would have probably fallen to Islam and the USA would never have come into existence.**







## The Facts of History

**The fact is that the crusades of the Middle Ages were a reaction to centuries of Islamic Jihad. In the first century of Islam alone Muslim invaders conquered the whole of the previously Christian North Africa destroying over 3200 churches – in just 100 years. In the first five centuries of Islam, Muslim forces killed Christians, kidnapped their children to raise them as Muslims, or compelled people at the point of the sword to convert to Islam.** Up to 50% of all the Christians in the world were wiped out during the first three centuries of Islam. The Saracens (as the Muslim invaders were called) desecrated Christian places of worship and were severely persecuting Christians. Pilgrims were then prevented from visiting those places where our Lord was born, was crucified and raised from the dead. It was only after four centuries of Islamic Jihad that the crusades were launched as a belated reaction to the blatant Islamic Jihad.

## Logistics and Economics

As the Christian History Institute has pointed out, the characterising of crusaders as only in it for the plunder and the loot betrays an ignorance of both geography and history. The vast majority of the crusaders were impoverished and financially ruined by the crusades. Crusaders, through great sacrifice and personal expense, left their homes and families to travel 3000km across treacherous and inhospitable terrain – and the shortest crusade lasted 4 years. Considering that only 10% of the crusaders had horses, and 90% were foot soldiers, the sheer fact of logistics is that the crusaders could not possibly have carried back enough loot to have made up for the loss of earnings and high expenses involved with these long crusades. Many crusaders lost their homes and farms to finance their involvement in the crusades.

## There's More to Life than Money

Perhaps self-seeking materialistic agnostics in the 21st Century cannot understand that some people could be motivated by something other than personal financial enrichment, but the fact is that many people make sacrifices for their religious convictions, and in order to help others. In the case of the crusaders, the historical record makes clear that amongst the motivations that led tens of thousands of volunteers to reclaim the Holy Land was a sense of Christian duty to help their fellow Christians in the East whose lands have been invaded and churches desecrated by Muslim armies, and a desire to secure access to the Holy Lands for pilgrims. There was also a desire to fight for the honour of their Lord Jesus Christ, Whose churches had been destroyed and Whose Deity had been denied by the Mohammanan aggressors. In other words, **to the crusaders this was a defensive war to reclaim Christian lands from Muslim invaders.**

We may not share their convictions, or agree with their methods, but we ought to evaluate them in the light of the realities of the 11th and 12th centuries, and not anachronistically project our standards and politics back upon them.

## Jihad Vs. The Gospel

The word “crusade” does not appear in the Bible, nor is it commanded in Christianity. However, Jihad is the sixth pillar of Islam and the second greatest command of Muhammad. It is not only commended, but commanded in the Quran.

The crusades ended many centuries ago. However Islamic Jihad is carried out to this day. Millions of Christians have been slaughtered throughout the centuries by Islamic militants – such as the 1.5 millions Armenians murdered in Turkey in 1915. Christians have continued to be slaughtered by Islamic militants in Indonesia, the Philippines, Sudan and Nigeria to the present day.

Therefore, before Christians fall over themselves to apologise for the crusades, which ended over 700 years ago, it would be wise to first learn from reliable sources what the crusades were all about, and study the Islamic teachings and track record of Jihad over the last 14 centuries. Those who do not know their past have no future.

**The Crusades ended over 700 years ago. Islamic Jihad continues to this day.**





## Chapter 11

### What Every Christian Should Know About The Inquisition

One of the re-occurring accusations against Christianity is that Christians are responsible for: *“The Inquisition!”*

Frequently, while trying to love one’s neighbour and share the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, Christians receive some tirade against *“The Church”* and *“The Inquisition!”* The Inquisition is used as some kind of general-purpose club with which to bludgeon Evangelical Christians.

On one occasion while I was being interviewed on a national secular radio programme, on the publication of my book: *Biblical Principles for Africa*, the first caller attacked me and my new book over something that the book doesn’t even deal with - she claimed that Christians were responsible for “the Inquisition” which “burned thousands of witches!”



#### The Anti-Christian Inquisition

When I finally had the chance to respond to this emotional outburst, I had to point out that a vast majority burned at the stake by the Spanish Inquisition were not witches at all, but Protestant believers. Should one study the court records of the inquisitors it becomes very clear that the inquisitors were by no means Christians at all. They would vindictively condemn to death Christians who believed in, who translated, or who taught, the Holy Scriptures. Often the inquisitors contemptuously tossed the victim’s Bible into the fire to be burned with the martyr.

Anyone who has read Foxes Book of Martyrs, or similar historical records of the cruel persecutions endured by the Waldensians, the Huguenots and other Protestant reformers, will know that the Inquisition was anti-Christian. The Inquisition occurred at a time of blatant corruption, when priesthoods, bishoprics and even papal seats were bought and sold. There were many ungodly men dominating all levels of leadership in the medieval Roman church. Far from the Inquisition being Christians persecuting non-Christians, the reality is that it was the very opposite. The Inquisition was an anti-Christian persecution of Protestant believers.

#### The Judas Factor

The church has never been perfect. Even amongst the twelve Apostles there was a Judas Iscariot who betrayed Christ. Yet it would not be fair to make Judas a representative of the twelve Apostles! The total record of the church needs to be examined, and the good far outweighs the bad. Besides of which the Christian Faith is centered in Christ, not in Christians.

When someone brings up the question of evil perpetrated in God’s Name, we need to first examine whether the people involved were true Christians or not. Our Lord Jesus Christ made it abundantly clear: *“Not everyone who says to Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter the Kingdom of Heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in Heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your Name, cast out demons in Your Name and done many wonders in Your Name, and then I will declare to them, I never knew you, depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!”* Matthew 7: 21-23



Our Lord Jesus Christ made it clear that some people are truly part of His Church, the elect are all those who are regenerated by His Holy Spirit. However, not all of those in the larger, visible church are members of the true, invisible Church of Christ. The Lord warned that there would be weeds amongst the wheat and goats amongst His sheep. Many who claim to be Christians are not Christians at all.

#### The Historical Facts

When people bring up the Inquisition we need to ask them what they actually know about the Inquisition? Seldom has the individual done any research on the matter at all. The Spanish Inquisition began in the year AD1233. This is almost three hundred years before the Protestant Reformation. So,

Protestants had no part in the Inquisition except as victims. Bible-believing, Evangelical Protestants were often on the receiving end of the Inquisition, tortured and killed for their beliefs. This included tens of thousands of Waldensian Christians tortured and murdered in the most brutal ways and the Lollards of England, the field workers of the Reformation, who were mercilessly persecuted. The English Reformer, William Tyndale, was burned at the stake in Belgium for the crime of having translated the Bible into the English language.

Protestants were burned at the stake as “heretics” in Spain, Italy, France, England and Scotland. Yet the Dutch Protestants suffered even worse persecutions at the hands of the Catholic Inquisition. Under King Phillip II of Spain, more than 18,000 Protestants were executed in the Netherlands. In an attempt to force them to confess to “heresy”, both men and women were mercilessly tortured.

### Excommunicating Holland

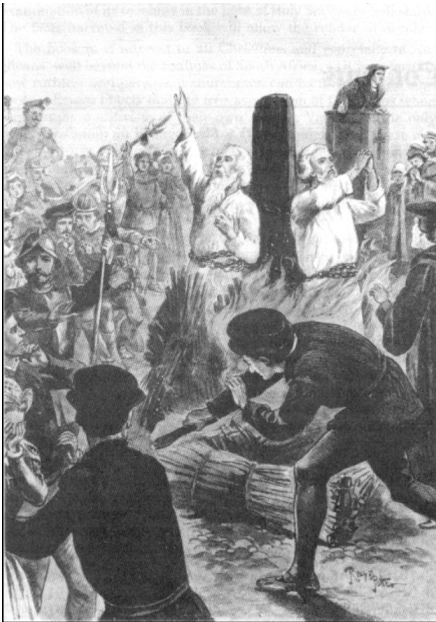
At that time, Spain was the most powerful country in the world. Holland was occupied by Spain. In 1566 Phillip II issued a proclamation demanding that all his subjects, accept the decrees made by the Council of Trent. Early in 1567, to crush the flourishing Protestant Faith in Holland, Phillip sent in the Duke of Alva, who unleashed a reign of terror upon the Dutch Protestants. In 1568 the Inquisition condemned all three million inhabitants of the Netherlands to death as “heretics”.

Under the courageous leadership of William Prince of Orange, the Dutch Protestants rose up in resistance against the oppression of Catholic Spain. Prince William the Silent and his brave Dutch resistance fighters became the inspiration of Protestants world wide, particularly in England.

### Bible Banned

After the Council of Valencia placed the Bible on The Index of Forbidden Books, in 1229, the papacy viciously persecuted the Waldensians. The hostility of the inquisitors to the Bible is clearly seen in their pronouncements such as in the condemnation of English Bible translator, Professor John Wycliffe of Oxford University: “Pestilent and most wretched John Wycliffe, of damnable memory ... crowned his wickedness by translating the Scriptures into the mother tongue!”

Similarly, the Inquisition condemned the Professor of Prague University, John Hus to be burned alive, for his Reformation works.



Foxes Book of Martyrs records the condemnation of prominent Protestant preacher, Reformer and Bible translator, John Rogers, who was burned at the stake, January 1555. Asked by the inquisitor to recant his beliefs, Rogers replied that what he had preached from the pulpit he would seal now with his blood.

“Then thou art an heretic!” exclaimed the inquisitor.

“That shall be known on the Day of Judgement,” replied Rogers.

“Well, I will never pray for you”, said his judge.

“I will pray for you”, responded Rogers. As he walked to the stake in Smithfield, Rogers sang the Psalms.

On one day in 1519 seven men and women in Coventry were burned alive by the Inquisition for the crime of teaching their children: The Lords Prayer, The Ten Commandments and The Apostles Creed - in English!

At his trial, Bishop Ridley was urged to reject his Protestant Faith. His reply: “As for the doctrine which I have taught, my conscience assureth me that it is sound and according to God’s Word ... in confirmation thereof I seal the same with my blood.”

### Blaming the Victims

Anyone attempting to blame Christians for the Inquisition is obviously ignorant of the historical record. It is an utter distortion to blame the victims for the tortures and murders, which were inflicted upon them. So, the next time non-Christians attempt to blame believers for the Inquisition, point out to them that in reality the Inquisition was an anti-Christian persecution of Protestant believers.



*“Woe to those who call evil good; and good evil;  
who put darkness for light, and light for darkness...”* Isaiah 5:20

Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



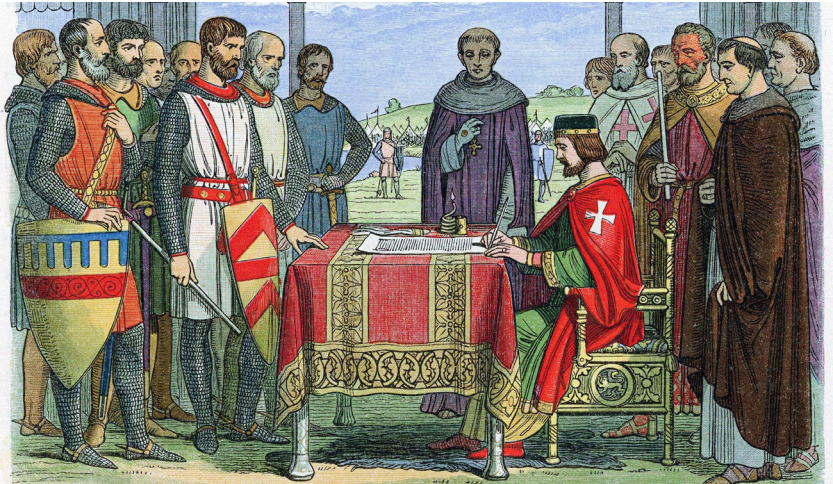
## Chapter 12

## MAGNA CARTA

*"...I will make you a great nation; I will bless you and make your name great; and you shall be a blessing... and in you all the families of the earth shall be blessed."* Genesis 12:1-3

**Most Valuable**

Magna Carta has been one of the most valuable exports of Great Britain to the rest of the world. Magna Carta has truly blessed all the families of the earth. Magna Carta was the first Statute, the first written restriction on the powers of government.

**Foundational**

Magna Carta, signed by King John at Runnymede, 15 June 1215, recognised foundational Scriptural principles: Justice must not be sold, delayed, or denied; no taxes may be levied without the consent of representatives of those being taxed; no one may be imprisoned without a fair trial by a jury of their peers; property must not be taken from any owner without just compensation. Religious freedom is foundational and must remain inviolable, with all *"its rights undiminished and its liberties unimpaired."*

Magna Carta is recognised as the grandfather of all Bills of Rights. Magna Carta was the inspiration for the Glorious Revolution of 1688, the model for the English Bill of Rights of 1689; and for the Bill of Rights of the United States of America.

Lord Denning described Magna Carta as *"the greatest Constitutional document of all times - the foundation of the freedom of the individual against the arbitrary authority of the despot."*

**Reformation**

During the greatest century of Reformation, in the 16<sup>th</sup> century, there was a tremendous upsurge of interest in Magna Carta and strenuous efforts to apply these Biblical principles of justice and freedom into all areas of British life.

**Liberty**

Magna Carta is an important symbol of liberty today. It is greatly respected worldwide by both historians and lawyers, as a potent foundational document for the protection of personal liberties. It has been described as one of the most important legal documents in history. *"Do not remove the ancient landmark..."* Proverbs 23:10

**God-Honouring**

The Archbishop of Canterbury, Stephen Langton, wrote Magna Carta, which declares: *"John, by the grace of God, King of England... know ye, that we, in the presence of God and for the salvation of our soul, and the souls of all our ancestors and heirs, and unto the honour of God, and the advancement of the Holy Church, and amendment of our realm... by this our present charter confirmed, for us and our heirs, forever; that the Church of England shall be free, and have her whole rights and her liberties inviolable..."*

**Bible-Based**

The Bible was clearly recognised as the foundational authority for Magna Carta. *"You shall do no injustice in judgement. You shall not be partial to the poor, nor honour the person of the mighty. In righteousness you shall judge your neighbour."* Leviticus 19:15

**Justice**

Magna Carta established the right of Trial by Jury to protect the accused from capricious condemnation by authorities. The high value that Christianity, from its inception, has placed on the individual is in stark contrast to the ancient Egyptian, Babylonian, Persian, Chinese, Greek and Roman cultures, in which the individual was always subordinate to the state. True liberty, individual rights and respect for human personality found no place in the ancient world.

### Christian Emphasis

It was the Christian emphasis on the individual that established the freedoms and rights enshrined in Magna Carta of 1215, and the later English Petition of Rights of 1628, the English Bill of Rights of 1689 and in the American Bill of Rights of 1791.



### Under God and Law

Sir Edward Coke, Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, challenged King James I, that Magna Carta gave the Courts of Common Law the right to provide justice *"from the highest to the lowest"* because the king was *"under God and the Law."* ***"You could have no power at all against Me unless it had been given you from above..."*** John 19:11. All civil authority is delegated by God and answerable to God.

### The Christian Roots of Liberty

Dr. Alvin Schmidt, in *How Christianity Changed the World*, documents that the freedoms and liberties expressed in Bills of Rights and Declarations of Independence, are extensions of Magna Carta, which is thoroughly Christian. Civic freedoms and liberties could not have occurred had it not been for the Christian values that prompted and shaped the formation of these documents, all of which are extensions of Magna Carta. Magna Carta is revered throughout the world as the cornerstone of modern freedom.

### Reaction to Tyranny

Sir Winston Churchill noted in his *History of the English Speaking Peoples*, that the rights and liberties of English speakers owes more to the vices of King John, than to the virtues of any man. King John was one of the worst kings that England ever had. His cruelty and capriciousness drove the barons of England to mobilise and compel King John to set the royal seal to Magna Carta, or Great Charter.

### Habeas Corpus

The sealing of Magna Carta, 15 June 1215, was a splendid victory for the English people. It marked an end to the arbitrary power of any ruler to throw a man in prison without granting him opportunity to prove his innocence. Magna Carta decrees that any man arrested must be tried in court and if it cannot be proved that he has done wrong, he must be set free. ***"To no one will we sell, to no one deny, or delay, right or justice."*** ***"He who justifies the wicked, and he who condemns the just, both of them alike are an abomination to the Lord."*** Proverbs 17:15

### Just Weights and Measures

No taxation is legal that is not authorised by those being taxed. Weights and measures must be standardised. ***"You shall do no injustice in judgment, in measurement of length, weight, or volume. You shall have honest scales, honest weights, an honest ephah, and an honest hin: I am the Lord your God."*** Leviticus 19:35-36

### Parliament

A Great Council of nobles and bishops is to advise and guide the king in governing the country. This Great Council soon developed into the English Parliament, which is the model and mother of all parliaments (Exodus 18:21).

### Rule of Law

The right of a fair Trial by Jury of one's peers, the right of having a voice in the running of the government and in determining taxes, the right to a just and uniform standard of weights and measures for money and goods, are just some of the many blessings which have flowed from Magna Carta. ***"Hate evil, love good; establish justice in the gate... let justice run down like water, and righteousness like a mighty stream."*** Amos 5:15,24

### The Authority of the Archbishop

Archbishop Stephen Langton strongly sympathised with the Northern barons who openly rebelled against King John. The Archbishop declared that if John refused to negotiate, then he would excommunicate every man in the Royal Army. The Barons advanced on London, where they were warmly welcomed. By the time they had pursued



the king to Staines, Magna Carta included 63 demands. On Monday, 15 June 1215, the Barons met the king in a meadow named Runnymede, on the South bank of the Thames River, halfway between Staines and Windsor. John agreed to the demands, but another four days were spent in hammering out the details of the wording and in making copies of the document. On Friday, 19 June, John fixed the royal seal to Magna Carta.

### **Enduring Legacy of Liberty**

Despite attempts by King John to violate his commitment, and the hostility of Pope Innocent III to Magna Carta, the regency of John's younger son, Henry III, reissued Magna Carta in 1216, and his son, Edward I, reissued Magna Carta in 1297, confirming it as part of England's Statute Law.

### **The Dooms of King Alfred**

During the time of the Reformation in the 16<sup>th</sup> century, there was an upsurge of interest in Magna Carta as lawyers and historians traced the principles of freedom in the Great Charter, to Biblically-based laws enacted during the times of the Anglo Saxons, such as *The Dooms* of King Alfred the Great at the end of the 9<sup>th</sup> century, which begin with The Ten Commandments, The Case Laws of Exodus and Christ's Sermon on the Mount. **"...It is not good to show partiality in judgment. He who says to the wicked, 'You are righteous', him the people will curse; nations will abhor him."** Proverbs 24:23-24

### **Restoring Liberty**

Both James I, and his son, Charles I, attempted to suppress the discussion of Magna Carta and this led to the English Civil War of the 1640s and the execution of Charles for high treason. The violation of the Rights of Englishmen as outlined in Magna Carta led to the Glorious Revolution of 1688, which ousted the Catholic James II, welcoming Protestant William and Mary to the throne and the signing of the English Bill of Rights in 1689. **"Righteousness exalts a nation, but sin is a reproach to any people."** Proverbs 14:34

### **Charter Rights in America**

The colonists in the 13 colonies of North America protested the violation of their chartered rights as outlined in Magna Carta when Parliament failed to provide redress for their grievances. In 1687, William Penn published *The Excellent Privilege of Liberty and Property: Being the Birthright of the Free-born Subjects of England*, which contained the first copy of Magna Carta printed on American soil. Penn's comments reflected those of Coke's, that Magna Carta was fundamental Law. The American colonists quoted extensively from Magna Carta concerning their rights to Trial by Jury and *Habeas Corpus*. The American founding fathers declared that their Constitution was to preserve their rights and liberties as enshrined in Magna Carta. The American founding fathers claimed Magna Carta as foundational for their American Constitution of 1789, which became the supreme law of the land in the USA. In 1976, Britain lent one of the four surviving originals of the 1215 Magna Carta to the United States for their Bicentennial celebrations and also donated an ornate case to display it. A replica is still on display in the United States capital crypt in Washington DC.

### **From Sea to Sea**

William Stubbs in his *Constitutional History of England*, published in the 1870s, documented that Magna Carta had been a major step in the shaping of the English people as a nation governed by laws under God. The British dominions, Australia, New Zealand, Canada, Southern Rhodesia and the Union of South Africa, all regard Magna Carta as foundational to their laws and sought to model their Constitutions on its provisions.

### **Birth Certificates of Freedom**

Four exemplifications of the original 1215 Magna Carta remain in existence and are held by the British Library and the cathedrals of Lincoln and Salisbury. At least 13 original copies of the 1215 Magna Carta were issued by the Royal Chancery at the time. These were sent to county sheriffs and bishops who made more copies and ensured that the provisions were understood by the population. The original Charters were written on vellum sheets, using quill pens, in abbreviated Latin. Each was sealed with the royal great seal using beeswax and resin, most of which have not survived. The 63 numbered clauses of Magna Carta were introduced by Sir William Blackstone in 1759 as the original Charters formed a single, long unbroken text. The four original 1215 Charters will be on joint display at the British Library this year, to mark the 800<sup>th</sup> anniversary of Magna Carta.

### **Precious Heritage**

Lincoln Cathedral's original copy of the 1215 Magna Carta was being displayed at the World Fair in New York when the Second World War broke out and spent the war years in Fort Knox. Prime Minister Winston Churchill attempted to gift the Charter to the American government, hoping that this would encourage the USA, then neutral, to enter the war, but Lincoln Cathedral refused to hand over the rights to such a precious heritage.

### Invaluable Documents

Only one exemplification of the 1216 Charter survived and is held in Durham Cathedral. Four copies of the 1217 Charter exist, three of these are held in the Bodleian Library in Oxford and one at Hereford Cathedral. The Australian government has a 1297 Charter on display in the Members Hall of Parliament House, Canberra. The National Archives in Washington DC has a copy of the 1297 Charter. (In 2007, a 1297 Magna Carta was sold at an auction for US\$21.3 Million, the most ever paid for a single page of text.)

### Christian Heritage

The Church in England played a central role in drafting Magna Carta, initiating the negotiations between the Barons and the king, and at least eleven other bishops were present at the signing of Magna Carta, along with its author, Archbishop Stephen Langton. *"Now the Lord is the Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty."* 2 Corinthians 3:17

### Continental Clash and Contrast

It was not surprising that Pope Innocent III reacted with hostility to Magna Carta and attempted to annul it. The Inquisition was being established on the continent with its *Corpus Juris*, while the Church in England was establishing *Habeas Corpus* and Trial by Jury. *"...Should you help the wicked and love those who hate the Lord? Therefore the wrath of the Lord is upon you."* 2 Chronicles 19:2

### The Threat from Brussels

For those who think Magna Carta is only a matter of distant interest for historians, Britain's membership of the European Union is threatening to undermine our Chartered Rights as Englishmen. Brussels is attempting to create a unified European criminal code which would abolish Trial by Jury, *Habeas Corpus* and other safeguards entrenched in Magna Carta. More influenced by the papal Inquisition and Napoleonic code's *Corpus Juris*, if allowed to progress unchecked, an EU prosecutor could issue European warrants, which could violate the foundation stones of our freedoms established in Magna Carta. *"Unless the Lord builds the house, they labour in vain who build it; unless the Lord guards the city, the watchman stays awake in vain."* Psalm 127:1

### God's Law or Chaos

Those who reject God and His Law have no objective basis for justice. If one rejects Creation and the Law of the Creator then social and moral chaos is inevitable. What does secular humanism offer us? *"You came from nothing! You are going nowhere! Life is meaningless!"* From goo to the zoo to you, from mud to monkeys to man. No ultimate standards of right and wrong. Situation ethics and relativism have led to the lawlessness tearing families and communities apart. We need to return to God's Law of perfect Liberty. *"But he who looks into the perfect Law of Liberty and continues in it, and is not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this one will be blessed in what he does."* James 1:25

*"Stand fast therefore in the liberty by which Christ has made us free, and do not be entangled again with a yoke of bondage... For you, brethren, have been called to liberty; only do not use liberty as an opportunity for the flesh, but through love serve one another."*

Galatians 5:1,13

Dr. Peter Hammond



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
 admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 13

### The GREATEST CENTURY of REFORMATION

Shortly after Martin Luther was born, the last Muslim stronghold in Spain, Grenada, fell, and the liberation of the Iberian Peninsula was complete. Then Christopher Columbus, sailing west across the Atlantic Ocean, discovered the Americas, the New World. While South Western Europe was celebrating its freedom after 8 centuries of oppression and occupation under Islam, South Eastern Europe was facing the relentless onslaughts of invasion by the Turks. Since the fall of the greatest city in the world at that time, Constantinople, to the Turks, in 1453, with the massacre of all the Christians in that city, the Turks had been an ever-present threat to Christendom, as Europe was then known.

#### The Renaissance

Threatened from the East by a relentless Islamic Jihad, Europe was suffering from the internal corruption of the Renaissance. The Renaissance was a time of material advance and spiritual decline. It led to the rise of absolutism and the loss of the individual rights and representative governments which Christian principles had developed throughout the Middle Ages. Renaissance rulers, epitomised by Machiavelli, rationalized despotism. Machiavelli advised rulers to be careful to maintain public relations through patronage of the arts and conspicuous charities, in order to create popularity, and to mask their hold on power.

#### A Return to Paganism

Although Ancient Rome had practiced human sacrifices, slavery, infanticide, persecuted Christians and fed martyrs to wild beasts, Renaissance scholars began to hail the pagans as wiser and their times as superior to the Christian. This Renaissance trend to turn towards the graves of Rome and Greece was not progress but a regression to a pagan past, a rejection of the Christian faith.

While Renaissance Italians revived the pagan writings and customs of Ancient Greece and Rome, and unearthed their statues, paintings and plays, immorality flourished and degeneracy accelerated. Along with the physical and intellectual exhumations, the ancient intellectual and spiritual diseases that had led both Rome and Greece to self-destruction came to infect life in Europe.

Literature became shallow and imitative. Absurd ancient theories about “*Humors*” were resuscitated at the expense of medical research. Everyone’s municipal freedoms and individual rights were lost as Humanists extolled the tyrannical Roman laws, which tyrants were quick to adopt.

The impact of glorifying a licentious past was absolutely devastating upon the morals and behaviour of Southern Europe. The despairing conclusion of Renaissance Humanism was that life is meaningless. To escape from this intellectual cul-de-sac, many began to plunge into the blind fortune of astrology and magic. Many people who had lost their belief in sin, and in rejecting the idea of eternal life, desperately sought for earthly fame and fortune.

Paganism deepened as the Renaissance extended. From the 14<sup>th</sup> to the 16<sup>th</sup> Centuries, many cities in Southern Europe appointed official astrologers. Universities had official stargazers. Even Popes relied on Horoscopes.

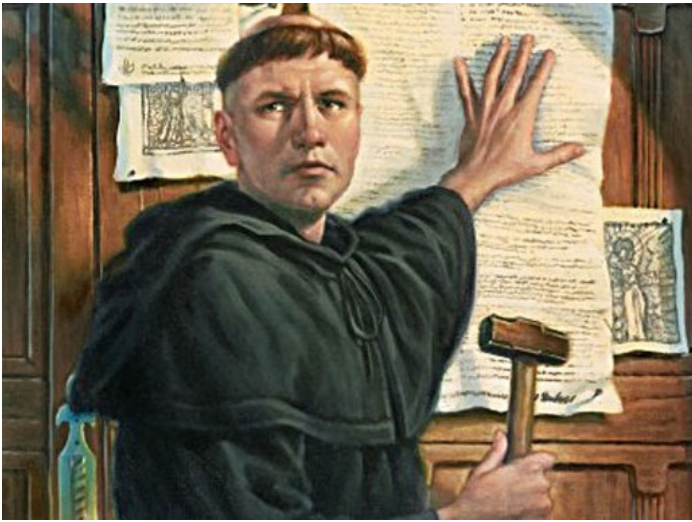
#### Corruption Challenged

With almost any position in the Catholic church open to the highest bidder, church positions became dominated by corrupt, money-grabbing Humanists who ruthlessly persecuted genuine believers.

Martin Luther, a brilliant lawyer and theologian visited Rome in 1510. Luther was shocked at the corruption and degeneracy of Rome: “*Everything is permitted in Rome, except to be an honest man.*”

To finance the Pope’s extravagant living and the construction of St. Peter’s Cathedral, the Catholic church was selling “*dispensations*” that allowed purchasers to break Church rules, to eat meat on fast days, to marry a close relative, to commit adultery and so on. In addition, the Catholic church sold “*indulgences*”, which could only be cashed in Heaven - to which they claimed to hold the keys. These Heavenly credits could be balanced against one’s sins committed on earth.

These earthly and spiritual pardons were being sold by a Dominican monk, John Tetzel, in Saxony, when Dr. Martin Luther, now a professor at Wittenburg University, wrote 95 Theses in protest. Luther argued that only God could forgive sins, it was better to help the poor than to buy indulgences, and truly repentant people do not desire to avoid punishment, but rather seek it.



Luther's challenge was in Latin, but some enterprising printer translated it into German and began to print and sell copies of it. Soon the 95 Theses were available in French, Spanish, Flemish, Dutch, and Italian. Soon Luther's dramatic challenge against the unBiblical corruption of indulgences was being read in the market places and palaces of Europe. Even the Pope was handed a copy to read.

### **Luther Takes on the Holy Roman Empire**

Between 1517 and 1520, 300,000 copies of Luther's writings were sold throughout Europe. It was the first time in history that a revolutionary idea had impacted a continent through a mass medium. Translators, printers, journalists and itinerant salesmen worked together to

challenge the entire social and ecclesiastical system of the Catholic church and the Holy Roman Empire.

At about the same time that Cortez was entering Mexico, and encountering Montezuma and the bloodthirsty Aztec Empire, Luther was challenging the Holy Roman Empire in Europe.

In 1520, the Pope issued Luther with a Bull – an ultimatum to submit and recant or be excommunicated. Luther's response was to burn the Papal bull in public, and then to write three booklets challenging foundational teachings of the Pope. Luther's booklets: "*An Appeal To the Christian Nobility*"; "*The Babylonian Captivity of the Church*," and "*The Freedom of a Christian*" created a sensation. Printing presses ran around the clock, turning out new editions. Luther rejected the right of the Vatican to interfere with the princes. He also recommended a national church and the expulsion of all papal representatives.

He taught that faith alone, and not good works, makes man righteous. Good works follow from faith. "*The tree bears fruit, the fruit does not bear the tree.*" Luther taught that we could not only receive forgiveness for our sins, but victory over the power of sin, over our own carnal nature, by God's grace alone. By the end of 1520, Luther was proclaiming the Pope "*Anti-Christ*".

Excommunicated by the Pope, all that stood between Luther and death at the hands of the Emperor was the protection of the Elector of Saxony. Prince Fredrick was reported to have said: "*There is much in the Bible about Christ, but not much about Rome.*"

Prince Fredrick of Saxony was one of the most senior and influential electors in Germany. He had been a serious contender for the position of Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire. Charles V was Emperor of Germany, King of Spain, Sardinia, Sicily, and the Netherlands. His ships were sailing around the globe, his vast armies dominated all of Europe. However, Charles V, could not ignore the authority of Prince Fredrick, because Germany was still largely feudal and the Emperor's power was not absolute. The German people still enjoyed many of the rights and powers, which the Renaissance had elsewhere swept away. Only recently crowned Emperor, and just 21 years old, Charles V had to be seen to respect the authority of the Electors who had only just crowned him. Prince Fredrick extracted a guarantee of safe conduct for Luther from the Emperor.

### **Captive to the Word of God**

Summoned to Worms, on 18 April 1521, Martin Luther stood firm before the Emperor, 6 Princes, 24 Dukes, 30 Archbishops and Bishops and 7 Ambassadors. The young Emperor sat on a raised dais, surrounded by men in gleaming armour, mitered Archbishops and splendidly dressed nobles.

Luther was denied any opportunity to debate or defend his doctrines. He was asked two questions, First: to confirm that the publications on the table were his, and the second: whether he would recant, admit that his writings were all heretical, and reject them.





Confirming that the books, booklets and leaflets were his writings, Luther pointed out that they were of different types, including basic Christian doctrine, which were accepted Christian truths – he could not recant Scriptural truth. Other of his works exposed the corrupt living, scandalous abuses and evils of the popes. If he were to reject these writings he would be as a “*cloak that covers evil.*” At this, the Emperor leaned forward and shouted: “*No!*” Luther continued that other of his works were against private individuals who had attacked his work and attempted to defend popery. He confessed that, in these, he had written too harshly.



The court demanded that Luther recant all his writings. Pressed again, in Latin, if he would recant, Luther answered in German: “*Unless I am convinced by Scripture or clear reasoning that I am in error – for Popes and Councils have often erred and contradicted themselves – I cannot recant, for I am subject to the Scriptures I have quoted; my conscience is captive to the Word of God. It is unsafe and dangerous to do anything against one’s conscience. Here I stand. I cannot do otherwise. So help me God. Amen.*”

Luther’s courageous and historic speech before the assembled might and authority of the Holy Roman Empire and the Catholic church shook the world.

### **Outlaw**

Furious, Charles V wanted Luther burned as a heretic. Prince Fredrick insisted that he honour his guarantee of safe conduct. Luther was allowed to leave, but the Emperor, and four Electors, signed a statement declaring Luther an outlaw. Prince Fredrick of Saxony, and the Elector of the Palatinate, refused to sign.

### **Kidnapped**

While frantic efforts were made to arrest Luther, Prince Fredrick secretly arranged for his kidnapping and spiriting away to be hidden as *Jonker Jorg* (Knight George) in the Wartburg Castle.

There, in disguise, in seclusion, Luther began a Bible translation *Blitzkrieg* and by the next year, 1522, the German New Testament was on sale for only a week’s wages.

### **Revolution**

Back in Wittenburg, Luther’s colleagues, Philipp Melancthon (a 21 year old professor of Greek) and Andreas Bodenstein Carlstadt (a 30 year old professor of Philosophy and Theology) continued the work of Reformation in Luther’s absence. Carlstadt took Luther’s intellectual rebellion and turned it into a religious revolution. He whipped up the crowds to destroy statues, shrines and all religious artifacts as idols that needed to be destroyed.

When Luther heard of this, he was shocked. Luther taught that people should not take the law into their own hands. Everything should be done decently and in order. And eliminating idolatry in our hearts comes before eradicating images in the churches.

### **The Problem with Images**

Images were a central means of communicating basic Gospel truths in the Middle Ages. As very few of the population could read and write, Bible stories were depicted through stain glass windows, statues and pictures. During the Middle Ages, it began to be accepted that Christians would not only learn the faith through these visual representations, but should also express the faith through reverencing these. An entire devotional system was developed, and an industry involving carpenters, painters, goldsmiths, silversmiths and other artisans built their livelihoods around providing images for the church. The Reformation, with its rejection of such idolatry, posed an economic threat to many of these people.

### **The Reformation Spreads**

Luther was far and away the most popular author in Europe. His writings outsold all others in Spain, France, Italy, the Netherlands, Switzerland, England and Germany.

Priests and nuns poured from the church and rushed towards marriage. Princes were converted to the Reformation. The new Pope, Adrian VI, elected in 1521 upon the death of Leo X, demanded Luther's arrest. The Prince of Saxony refused to co-operate.

### **The Peasants Revolt**

Radical opportunists, such as Thomas Munzer, used this intellectual and spiritual upheaval to try to launch a political revolution. By the end of 1524, 30,000 armed peasants had risen up and began looting castles and monasteries, pillaging churches, kidnapping nobles, demanding ransoms and committing widespread arson and mass murder.

Horrified, Luther issued a pamphlet in 1524: "*Against The Robbing and Murdering Hordes of Peasants.*" He not only disassociated from these bandits and revolutionaries, but he applied Biblical principles as to the duty of the princes to use the sword to protect the law abiding, and to punish the lawbreakers. The princes responded decisively against this anarchy and lawlessness. Munzer and 5,000 of his followers were wiped out by the knights. Another 20,000 rebellious peasants were killed in Alsace.

The greatest loss of life during this peasant's rebellion occurred in Austria. Charles V's younger brother, Ferdinand, crushed the rebellion - with 130,000 peasants being killed in battle, or by execution. The peasant's revolt had been disastrous. Hundreds of castles and monasteries had been ruined. Hundreds of towns were depopulated and impoverished. Over 50,000 homeless wandered across the countryside, or hid in the forests. There were many widows and orphans. Because many of the rebels had destroyed the charters that recorded the municipal rights and feudal dues, new charters, many far more demanding, were drawn up. Censorship laws were enforced all over Europe.

### **Turkish Invasion**

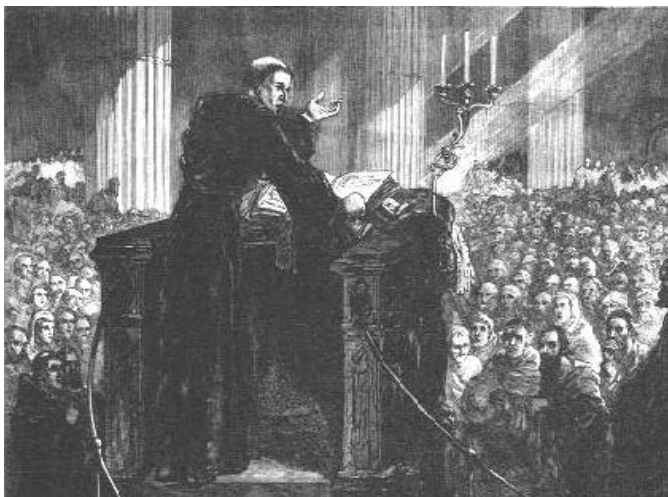
Then, in 1526, the Muslim Turks attacked Hungary. Suleiman, the Magnificent, overwhelmed the small Hungarian army of 30,000 with his 300,000 invading Turks. King Louis II of Hungary was killed and the capital, Buda (what is today Budapest) was captured and looted by the Turks. The Turkish invaders drove off over 200,000 Hungarian Christians into Islamic slavery.

### **Rome is Sacked**

The next year, 1527, Emperor Charles V led his army to capture Rome, the richest city in Europe. The corruption and meddling of the Pope had outraged even ardent Catholic Charles V. Now his army sacked Rome itself. The Pope was held for an immense ransom. Throughout Europe this was seen as the Judgment of God upon a debauched city and a corrupt church.

### **Repression in the Netherlands**

The Catholic Inquisition in the Netherlands demanded that all hold to and believe the doctrines of the Holy Roman Catholic church. "Men and women who disobey this command shall be punished as disturbers of public order. Women who have fallen into heresy shall be burned alive. Men, if they recant, shall lose their heads. If they continue obstinate, they shall be burned at the stake. The Inquisition is to enquire into the private opinions of every person, of whatever degree. Law officers of all kinds shall assist the Inquisition at their peril. Those who know where heretics are concealed, shall denounce them, or they shall suffer as heretics themselves." Under this edict, in the Netherlands alone, over 50,000 Protestants were killed.



### **Zwingli's Reformation**

In Switzerland, Ulrich Zwingli had launched a parallel Reformation starting with the expository preaching of the Gospel of Matthew, 1 January 1519, in *Grossmunster* in Zurich. The City Council supported Zwingli's Reforms. All Zurich clergymen were ordered to preach only from the Scripture. The Bible became the basis for all law. The Council abolished the mass. All religious images, statues, relics and ornaments were removed from churches. Monks, nuns and priests were permitted to marry. Soon other Swiss cantons were embracing the Reformation.

In 1529, a Protestant missionary from Zurich was burned at the stake for preaching the Gospel in the Catholic canton





of Schwyz. Zurich stopped all trade with Schwyz in protest. The Catholic Cantons declared war. At the Battle of Kappel, October 1531, 8,000 Catholic soldiers overwhelmed the 1,500 Protestants. Zurich Reformer, Ulrich Zwingli, died in this battle and was killed by a Catholic captain when he refused to call upon the Virgin Mary.

### Repression in France

At the beginning of the 16<sup>th</sup> Century, France was the largest and richest nation in Europe. France had a population of 16 million at a time when Spain had 7 million and England had 3 million. Paris was the largest city in Europe with a population of 300,000.

Luther's books poured into France. French Reformer, Jacques le Fevre, published a French translation of the New Testament in 1523, and the next year of the Psalms. He was denounced as a "heretic."

King Francis I ordered vigorous persecution to stamp out the Protestant Faith in his realm. Protestants were branded, their hands and noses amputated, red-hot irons were applied to the head. Many were burned alive.

At the same time as Francis I was ordering mutilations and tortures on Protestants, his sister, Marguerite, was herself praying with Reformer Farel, and protecting Protestants.

### The Outlaw John Calvin

Brilliant young law student, John Calvin, was converted to the Protestant Faith, and started to call for a purified Christianity, stressing salvation through grace. He wrote a treatise on life after death, and another on Christian Doctrine. Calvin was arrested twice, and after a number of life-threatening escapes, Calvin was declared an outlaw and he was on the run from the authorities.

By 1536, he had produced "*The Institutes of the Christian Religion*" a theological masterpiece, systematically expounding the Biblical Faith, conduct and devotion of the Protestant Faith.

### Farel Wins Geneva to the Reformation

When French Protestant preacher, Guillaume Farel, first came to Geneva it was a very immoral city. Geneva had a prostitutes quarter, priests living with concubines, and a corrupt bishop. Farel first came to Geneva in October 1532. Farel was a missionary from Bern, the strongest Protestant canton in Switzerland. Farel had played a leading role in bringing about the triumph of the Reformation in Bern, Neuchatel, and several other towns. He had also won over the Waldenses to embrace the principles of the Reformation. Farel's fiery preaching and unbeatable logic in debate with the Catholics won the city. As hundreds of



Genevans were won to Christ, Farel seized the Cathedral of St. Peter and on 21 May 1536, the General Assembly of citizens voted in favour of the Reformation and made the Protestant Faith the official religion of Geneva.

### Calvin's Call to Geneva

With Geneva in revolt against its bishop and against the Duke of Savoy, Farel knew that his eloquence and evangelistic zeal was not sufficient to disciple this distracted city. It was at that opportune time that a local war compelled Calvin to divert through Geneva. He had planned to spend only one night in Geneva. When Farel heard that this famous French scholar and author was passing through, he hurried to recruit him. Calvin's mind was set

on his studies, but Farel would have none of that. He threatened that God would curse his studies if he refused to aid the church in Geneva at this critical time. Visibly shaken, and struck with terror, Calvin reluctantly agreed to serve in Geneva. Calvin began his ministry in the Church of St. Peter by preaching through the Epistles of St. Paul.

### Turbulent Times

King Francis I of France shocked all of Christendom by making an alliance with the Turks in his war against Charles V. His political and military gamble failed, he was defeated and died bankrupt and disgraced, in 1547. The deaths of both France I and Henry VIII in the same year, 1547, emphasized the turbulence of that time when Luther, Zwingli, Farel and Tyndale had contended with the Popes and Charles V, Henry VIII and Francis I for the heart, mind and soul of Christendom.

The Protestant Faith swept across Europe flourishing in Switzerland, Germany, Holland, England and Scotland.

### Scotland

Scottish Reformer, George Wishart, was burned at the stake in Scotland. The Archbishop responsible for his execution, Cardinal David Beaton, was brutally assassinated in revenge. Protestants captured the Castle of St. Andrews. They were joined by John Knox, besieged by a French fleet, captured and condemned to the galleys.

### Reformation in England

When King Henry VIII of England died, his 9 year old son, a dedicated Protestant, Edward VI, became king. Archbishop Thomas Cranmer initiated sweeping Reforms. All paintings and images were removed from churches. The mass was abolished and replaced with communion. The English language replaced Latin in worship services. The English "*Book of Common Prayer*" was introduced. Priests received permission to marry. Stone altars were demolished and replaced by tables. Protestant books and pamphlets flooded England.

### Calvin's Geneva

Guided by John Calvin's Biblical preaching and systematic teaching, Geneva became the hub of the Reformation. Refugees fleeing persecution found sanctuary in Geneva. Calvin's writings produced the greatest concentration of printers and publishing firms in the world.

Calvin established an Academy that taught Greek, Hebrew, Latin and Theology. Graduates of Geneva's Academy carried the Reformed teachings into France, Holland, England and Scotland.

### Edward VI

King Edward VI of England intervened to secure the release of the Protestants of St. Andrews, including John Knox, from the galleys of France, in a prisoner exchange. Knox was appointed a royal chaplain and helped Archbishop Cranmer in producing "*The Book of Common Prayer*."

Then the young Protestant King Edward became seriously ill, suffering from measles, small pox and tuberculosis.



Rumors that he had been poisoned by a Catholic assassin abounded.

### Lady Jane Grey

Fears for the future of the Reformation in England at the imminent death of King Edward VI caused the Regent, the Duke of Northumberland, to persuade the King to alter the Laws of Succession to bypass his Catholic sister, Mary, and crown Lady Jane Grey as Queen. In the end Edward's death came swiftly, as the Catholic forces mustered to place Mary Tudor on the throne of England. Jane was Queen for only 9 days when the forces of Mary arrested and imprisoned her in the Tower of London. Pressured by her cousin, Mary, to renounce her Protestant Faith and embrace Catholicism, 16 year old Lady Jane courageously remained steadfast, and was beheaded as a result.





### **Bloody Mary**

Queen Mary married the heir to the Holy Roman Empire, Prince Philip of Spain. Philip arrived with a huge fleet of ships and a vast Spanish entourage to dominate the English court. Cardinal Reginald Pole was appointed Archbishop of Canterbury. England was formally returned to Catholicism, and the most prominent Protestant bishops, including Hooper, Ridley, Latimer and (the previous Archbishop) Cranmer, were burned at the stake, followed by hundreds of other prominent Protestant leaders. With every execution resistance to Catholicism spread and commitment to the Reformation doctrines deepened.

### **The End of Charles V**

As Charles V abdicated in 1556, Mary's husband Philip became King Philip II. Soon English troops and cavalry were being sent to the Netherlands to help crush the widespread Protestant revolt.

From the perspective of the Holy Roman Empire, the year 1558 was disastrous. Charles V, (the Emperor who Martin Luther had defied with his "*my conscience is captive to the Word of God...Here I stand...*" speech), died in agony, 21 September 1558. Charles V had condemned over 30,000 Protestants to torturous executions during his reign.

### **Reversal of Fortunes**

Shortly after that, on 17 November 1558, "*Blood Mary*" died of fever. Twelve hours later her Cardinal Pole, Archbishop of Canterbury, died of the same fever in Lambeth Palace.

1559 began with the Protestants on the march, and with the Catholic cause in defeat and retreat. Emperor Charles V was now dead. His sister, Mary, the former Regent of the Netherlands had also died. Mary of Lorraine, Regent of Scotland, was out of power, and on the run. "*Bloody Mary's*" Counter Reformation in England had been counterproductive, instead of returning England to Catholicism, she had only succeeded in entrenching the vast majority of Englishmen in their commitment to the Reformation. On 15 January 1559, Protestant Elizabeth Tudor was crowned Queen of England.

### **Knox takes Scotland by Storm**

On 2 May 1559, John Knox returned from exile to Scotland. His fiery sermon against idolatry galvanized the Scottish into immediate action. Altars were demolished. Images, statues and crucifixes were removed from churches. The Scottish Lords of the Congregation worked together with the English to force all French troops to leave Scottish soil. The Scottish Parliament instructed Knox to draw up a Confession of Faith, which was adopted into law.

In 1560, the Geneva Bible was published. Before it was replaced by the King James Version (1611) over 140 editions of the Geneva Bible were published.

### **Mary Queen of Scots**

The attempt to return Scotland to Catholicism by the return of Mary Stuart, Queen of Scots, in 1561, put the Reformation in jeopardy. Mary Stuart was heir to England's throne if Elizabeth died. Numerous Catholic assassination attempts and intrigues to replace Elizabeth I with Mary Queen of Scots underlined the peril to the cause of Reformation and freedom in England itself.

Mary Queen of Scots' immorality and intrigues outraged the population of Scotland. John Knox's courageous confrontations of Mary and the scandal caused by her complicity in the murder of her husband, and marrying of his murderer, finally led to her being forced to abdicate in 1567. Her infant son was crowned James VI of Scotland (he later became James I of England). Knox preached at James VI's coronation.

### **Catholic Cruelty in Holland**

Meanwhile, while the Reformation was triumphing in Britain, it was under relentless attack on the continent of Europe. Charles V's son, Philip II, was determined to crush the flourishing Protestant Faith in Holland. In 1566, Philip issued a proclamation requiring all his subjects to accept the decrees made by the Council of Trent. All who would not comply with these demands were to be delivered to the Inquisitors.

In 1567, Philip sent in his Spanish troops, led by the cruel Duke of Alva. Alva set up the Council of Blood which had 8,000 Dutch Protestants executed. Another 30,000 had their property confiscated. In 1568, the Inquisition condemned all the inhabitants of the Netherlands – 3 million men, women and children – to death as "*heretics*."

### **William Prince of Orange**

William the Silent, Prince of Orange, became the leader of the persecuted Dutch Protestants. William and his Dutch soldiers fought valiantly, despite overwhelming odds. Their greatest strength was their skilled navy, which, although they were vastly outnumbered and outgunned by the Spanish, triumphed over the Spanish time and again.

In 1579, the 7 northern provinces joined to form the United Provinces of the Netherlands. In 1581, the United Provinces declared the Netherlands to be independent of Spain. In 1584, the Dutch suffered a severe blow when a Spanish agent assassinated Prince William – the Father of Dutch Liberties. The Dutch Protestants continued to fight for their freedom until 1648 when their independence from Spain was finally secured.

### The Muslim Threat

It was not as though Europe's only threat was from treacherous tyrants, just the year before the St. Bartholomew's Day Massacre in France, Europe faced a most desperate attack from the Muslim Turks. In 1571, the Turkish



Empire stretched from the Ukraine to Hungary to Egypt and Persia, from North Africa to the Caspian Sea. Turkish warships attacked Christian shipping from all along North Africa. Turkish pirates pillaged and looted the coasts of Europe capturing Christians as slaves as far afield as England and Ireland.

### The Fall of Cyprus

In 1571, Cyprus fell to the Turks. 5,000 Greek and Italian Christians killed 30,000 Turkish attackers in their fierce resistance. Only after all supplies were exhausted and guarantees of safe conduct were offered, did the garrison finally surrender. But the Turks treacherously had all the Venetian prisoners executed, and the rest of the Christians shipped to Constantinople as slaves. The courageous Christian General, Bragadino, had his nose and ears cut off, his teeth broken and was whipped daily until 17 August, when he was flayed alive in the city square. The Turks laid waste to the island of Corfu and massed their fleets to attack Europe.

### The Battle of Lepanto

The European forces were led by Don John of Austria, half brother of Philip II. The Battle of Lepanto on 7 October 1571 was one of the most critical naval battles in history. The Christian forces, with 208 warships were outnumbered by the larger Turkish fleet of 230. The Christian forces closed in for the fight in hand to hand combat with the enemy. Spanish infantry flowed onto the Turkish vessels and, in ferocious hand-to-hand combat, overwhelmed the Turks. The Turkish losses were estimated at over 30,000 dead and wounded and 15,000 prisoners. On their side, the Christians had lost 10 galleys, 8,000 men killed and 21,000 wounded.

Lepanto was one of the great turning points in history. It ended the fear of the Turks that had threatened to overwhelm all of Europe. It stopped the Turkish advance. Church bells tolled throughout Europe as many prayers of thanksgiving were offered by millions of grateful Europeans. As historian, Otto Scott, observed: *“Only God could have saved so divided a Europe against so determined and savage, rich and heavily armed a foe. After Lepanto the Turk remained a menace, but not an unconquerable one.”*

### Massacres in France

The St. Bartholomew's Day Massacre horrified Protestants worldwide and entrenched the conviction that the Catholic church was treacherous and that any guarantees given by them or treaties signed would not be honoured. Up to 30,000 Protestants were massacred throughout France, including the leader of the French Huguenots, Admiral Gaspard de Coligny. The massacre was ordered by King Charles IX under the influence of his mother Catherine de Medici.

### The St. Bartholomew's Day Massacre

The St. Bartholomew's Day Massacre, 24 August 1572, began at 3 in the morning. The first to be murdered was the aristocratic Admiral Coligny. Henry of Guise supervised the attack. His men burst into Coligny's home, stabbed the Admiral and threw him out of the window. As Coligny landed at Guise's feet, Henry of Guise spat on the body, and then told his men to spread the word that the king commanded the death of all Huguenots: *“Kill them all! Kill them all!”*



Horrible slaughter and mutilations followed. Approximately 5,000 Protestants were murdered in Paris alone. The Spanish Ambassador wrote: "As I write, they are killing them all, they are stripping them naked...sparing not even the children. Blessed be God!" Similar massacres occurred in Lyon, Dijon, Tours, Rouen, Troyes, and Toulouse. A total of 30,000 Protestants were murdered on St. Bartholomew's Day throughout France.



When the news reached Rome, the Cardinal of Lorraine gave the bearer of this news a thousands crowns. Gregory XIII and his Cardinals attended a solemn high mass of thanksgiving. The Pope ordered a special medal to be struck commemorating the massacre with the words "Pontifex Colbni Necent Probat" (The Pope approves the killing of Coligny).

### Resistance Stiffens

The St. Bartholomew's Day Massacre permanently altered Protestant thinking. Calvinists turned from previously accepting the divine right of kings to questioning the entire institution of the monarchy. The Catholic cause, already stained by "Bloody Mary's" persecutions in England, and the Duke of Alva's slaughter in the Netherlands, was now indelibly identified with the most bestial persecutions, tyranny and treachery.

Two months later, the Calvinists launched an offensive that lasted nearly a year. At its conclusion, Charles IX was forced to sign another treaty guaranteeing freedom of worship in France. English gold and practical support boosted the Protestant resistance in the Netherlands and Scotland.

Jesuit assassins and conspirators arrived in England to arrange for the overthrow of Elizabeth I, and her replacement with Mary Stuart. An army bearing papal banners invaded Ireland. In 1583, a Catholic plot involving English noblemen and a Spanish plan for invasion was uncovered. The Spanish Ambassador was expelled from England. As long as Mary Stuart remained alive she presented a clear and present danger to the life of Elizabeth, and the survival of the Protestant Faith and freedom in England. Mary Stuart represented Spain, the vast Catholic international and the Guises of France. Parliament placed Mary Stuart on trial at Fotheringay Castle. Despite attempts by Elizabeth to stop the proceedings, Mary Stuart was sentenced to death and executed 12 May 1587.

### The Spanish Armada

Philip II, who had recently conquered Portugal, now began to prepare for an invasion of England. This was while France was torn by civil war with three armies in the field, one led by the giggling transvestite with a whitened face, Henry III, the other by Henry Duke of Guise, and the third by Henry of Navarre, a Protestant.

King Philip of Spain then launched what the Spaniards called, the "Invincible Armada." The world had never before seen such a powerful fleet. Having recently defeated the Turkish fleet, the tiny English navy was not perceived to be any significant obstacle to the Spanish invasion and conquest of England. Philip looked forward to the destruction of the





Protestants and the restoration of Catholicism in England. With the English support severed, it would be easy for him to finally crush the rebellion in the Netherlands.

However, while churches throughout England held extraordinary prayer meetings, a storm wrecked the Spanish plans. The Duke of Parma's invasion barges from Holland were not able to be used, and the English tactics of setting fireships amongst the huge Spanish galleons, created confusion. Courageous action by English seamen and continuing storms decimated and broke up the Spanish Armada. Dutch support also helped the English defeat the Spanish Armada. Most of what was left of Philip's fleet was devastated by more storms on the coast of Scotland and Ireland. Only a miserable remnant of the once proud Armada limped back into the ports of Spain. 51 Spanish ships and 20,000 men had been lost. The English navy had not even lost one ship!

The greatest superpower of Europe at that time had suffered a crippling blow. The defeat of the Spanish Armada in 1588 marked a great watershed in history. It signaled the decline of Spain and the rise of England. Commemorative medals were struck with the inscriptions: "God blew and they were scattered!" and "Man proposes, God disposes."

### The Rise of Protestant Naval Powers

Before 1588, the world powers were Spain and Portugal. These Roman Catholic empires dominated the seas and the overseas possessions of Europe. Only after the English defeated the Spanish Armada did the possibility arise of Protestant missionaries crossing the seas. As the Dutch and British grew in military and naval strength, they were able to challenge the Catholic dominance of the seas and the new continents. Foreign missions now became a distinct possibility.

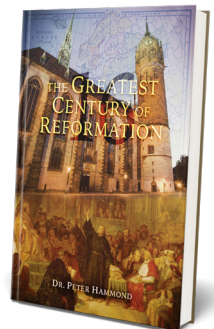
### The Defeat of Spain and the Triumph of the Reformation

Had the Armada succeeded, recent history would be unrecognizable. In the 16<sup>th</sup> Century, Spain led the Catholic cause; England the Protestant. All of Europe feared Spain. It had defeated all its adversaries, even the Turk. The Catholic nations of Europe had every expectation that Spain would succeed in crushing Protestantism by conquering England and Holland. When the Armada failed, the mystique of Spanish invincibility was destroyed. With the defeat of Catholic Spain the Vatican cause floundered. If "Bloody Mary" had undermined the Catholic credibility, the defeat of the Spanish Armada eradicated every hope that the Reformation in England could be reversed.



The extraordinary energies that had been released by the rediscovery of the Bible in the common tongue, had led to the most extraordinary spiritual revival in history, freed the Christians of Northern Europe from the decadence of the Renaissance paganism and led to the greatest birth of freedom and scientific discoveries in history.

The 16<sup>th</sup> Century was the Greatest Century of Reformation.





## Chapter 14

# The GREAT SIEGE of MALTA

### The Turkish Threat

In 1565 Islam was threatening all of Europe. The Ottoman Turkish Empire had conquered the entire Middle East, sacking the greatest city in the world at that time, Constantinople (now renamed Istanbul), massacring the Christian population. In 1526, the Turks had unsuccessfully besieged Vienna, in the very heart of Europe.

### Slave Raids on Europe

Muslim slave raiders were depopulating whole villages, attacking coastal towns of Italy, France, Spain, Portugal, England, Wales and Ireland and even seizing white slaves from as far away as Iceland. Ultimately over 1.1 million Christian Europeans were kidnapped and enslaved by Muslim pirates between 1500 and 1800.

### The Last Crusaders

One thorn in the side of the aggressive expansionism of the Ottoman Empire was the Christian Island of Malta. Malta was the headquarters of the last crusaders; the Knights Hospitaller, also known as the Order of St. John of Jerusalem. The Knights of St. John had proven to be the most tenacious enemies of Islamic *Jihad*. They were the last knights to leave the Holy Land. From the Island of Rhodes, they had raided Islamic shipping, setting many Christian captives free from Islamic slavery. After enduring severe sieges of Rhodes, their position in the eastern Mediterranean became indefensible and they sailed away, leaving that island to the Muslims.

### A New Base of Operations

The Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire, Charles V, offered the Knights of St. John the Island of Malta as a new base for their operations. On 26 October 1530, the knights sailed into Malta's Grand Harbour and soon turned this strategic island into a Naval Base from which they intercepted many Muslim slave raiders, endangering the lucrative Muslim piracy and slavery racket.

### Suleiman Determines to Destroy the Knights of Malta

As the Knights of St. John continued to interdict and harass the Turkish piracy routes, "*Suleiman the Magnificent – Vice Regent of God on earth, Lord of the lords of East and West, and possessor of men's necks, King of believers and unbelievers, ... majestic Caesar, etc. etc.*" mobilised the largest armada yet seen with 193 ships, 40,000 fighting men, including over 6,300 of the elite *Janissaries* ("*the invincible ones*"). Their objective: to wipe the Knights of St. John off the face of the earth and capture the strategic island of Malta for Islam: "*So long as Malta remains in the hands of the knights, so long will relief from Constantinople to Tripoli run the danger of being*



*taken or destroyed... this cursed rock is like a barrier interposed between us and your possessions... "*

### The Siege of 1551

This was not the first time that the Turks had attempted to seize Malta. In 1551 the Corsair Turgot Reis had invaded the Island with a force of over 10,000 fighting men. As this attempt failed, Turgot withdrew and bombarded the neighbouring Island of Gozo. After the population surrendered and opened their gates of their city, the Muslims looted the town and enslaved virtually the entire population of 5,000 people.

### The Ongoing War

Throughout the years, the *Guerre de Course* (running battle), between the Muslim slave raiding pirates and the Knights of St. John continued unabated.

### The Disaster of Djerba

In May 1560, the Ottoman victory in the naval battle of Djerba captured or sunk about half the vast Spanish naval

expedition, which sought to evict the Corsair pirates from Tripoli. This disaster marked the high point of Ottoman Turkish domination of the Mediterranean Sea.

### **Preparing for Invasion**

As a result of this failed siege of 1551, the Knights of St. John strengthened Fort St Angelo at the tip of Birgu as well as constructing of two new forts: Fort St. Michael (at Senglea) and Fort St. Elmo (on Mount Sciberras). All three of these forts proved crucial during the great siege of 1565. The Grand Master of the Order of St. John, Jean de la Valette, began vigorous preparations to enable Malta to survive an extended siege. As his espionage network informed him of the imminent invasion, De la Valette set about accumulating stores, ammunition, strengthening fortifications, recruiting further fighting men and recalling all knights to Malta.

### **The Islamic Invasion Force**

The official historian of the Order, Giacomo Bosio, recorded that the Turkish fleet consisted of 193 vessels including 131 galleys, 7 galliots, 11 large merchant ships (one of which alone held 600 armed men, 6,000 barrels of gun powder and 1,300 rounds of cannon ball.) Balbi di Correggio, in his famous *Siege Diary*, records that the Turkish invading force included: 6,300 *Janissaries*, over 6,000 *spahis* (cavalry), 4,000 “*religious fanatics*”, 2,500 *spahis* from Rouania, 500 *spahis* from Karamania, 6,000 other volunteers, various corsairs from Tripoli and Algiers totalling over 48,000 fighting men in all.

### **The Defenders**

On the Christian side, there were less than 700 Knights of St. John, 400 Spanish soldiers, 800 Italian soldiers, 200 Greek and Sicilian soldiers, approximately 3,000 soldiers drawn from the Maltese population, and along with other civilians who were given weapons, a total force of less than 9,000 men.

### **De la Valette**

The Grand Master of the Order of St. John, Jean de la Valette, was 71 years old. He had been a Knight of St. John since 18 years old. He was a veteran of the siege of Rhodes of 1522. De la Valette had survived a year as a galley slave, rowing up to 20 hours a day in a Muslim galley.

### **The Cross and the Crescent**

Valette challenged his knights: *“It is the great battle of the Cross and the Quran which is now to be fought. A formidable army of infidels are on the point of invading our Island. We, for our part, are the chosen soldiers of the Cross, and if Heaven requires the sacrifice of our lives, there can be no better occasion than this. Let us hasten then, my brothers, to the sacred altar. There we will renew our vows and retain by our Faith in the sacred sacraments, that contempt for death which alone can render us invincible.”*

### **The Knights of St. John**

When the knights left the church they were filled with enthusiastic joy. It was reported that after the service every kind of weakness disappeared. *“All divisions between them and all private animosities ceased.”* The Knights of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem were devout, aristocratic and war-like. They boasted the bluest of blood among their members. The military monks had developed an efficient security service providing armed escorts for Christian pilgrims throughout the dangerous Holy Land. After the success of the First Crusade they became a Military Order in 1113. Young aristocrats from Spain, Portugal, England, France, Germany and Italy enthusiastically joined the Knights of St. John. The knights became recognised as the very frontline of the battle for Christendom, a bulwark to keep Europe safe from Islamic *Jihadists*. The Knights of St. John were recognised as the toughest soldiers in Christendom.

### **The Siege of Rhodes**

In 1522, 7,000 knights and soldiers on the island of Rhodes resisted over 90,000 of the Sultan’s forces for six months. Only when all supplies were exhausted and no possibility of continuing the fight remained, did the Knights of St. John board their ships and withdraw.

### **The Siege of Malta 1565**

As the sun rose on 18 May, 1565, the horizon filled with white sails emblazoned with the Sultan’s Red Crescent. The Great Siege of Malta had begun. The invaders were supremely confident they would be able to overwhelm and subjugate the small band of knights on the island of Malta.



## **St. Elmo**

Their first target was the small Fort of St. Elmo, which dominated the entrance to the Grand Harbour. A mere 100 knights and 500 soldiers held Fort St. Elmo. De la Valette had ordered them to fight to the last man. The length of their survival would determine the outcome of the whole campaign. The Turks had estimated that they would need just three days to bombard St. Elmo into submission. Yet the garrison of St. Elmo held on through an incredible 35 days of constant bombardment and waves of assault.

## **A Battle for Europe**

All of Europe prayed fervently realising what was at stake. As Queen Elizabeth of England declared: *“If the Turks should prevail against the Isle of Malta, it is uncertain what further peril might follow to the rest of Christendom.”*

## **Artillery Barrage**

Mustapha Pasha ordered the huge siege guns to be dragged to Mount Sciberras. Two 60 pound *culverins*, ten 80 pounders and an enormous *basilisk* firing a solid 160 pound shot were brought for the attack on St. Elmo. After a week of preparation and bombardment by such heavy artillery, the sandstone and lime blocks composing the Fort of St. Elmo had begun to crumble. The Turks relentlessly pounded away at the small fort.

## **Counter Attack!**

After the first night of bombardment, the besieged knights made a sortie, stealthfully lowering their drawbridge and captured the closest enemy trench. Mustapha commanded *“Janissaries forward!”* As the Janissaries stormed the trenches they were cut down by the cannon of St. Elmo.

## **The Drawn Sword of Islam**

The arrival of Drajut, known amongst his men as *“the drawn sword of Islam”* and *“the scourge of the Christians”*, encouraged the Turkish forces. He brought another 1,500 of his elite warriors. Drajut noticed what Mustapha had missed: the strength of St. Elmo was the re-supplies they received each night from St. Angelo. As the artillery bombardment of St. Elmo doubled in intensity, their defenders tried to erect counter walls behind the crumbling outer walls.

## **Abandoned and Alone**

At this time, word reached de la Valette that the relief hoped for, from nearby Sicily, had been seriously delayed. Valette read the dispatch to his Council and declared: *“We now know that we cannot look to others for our deliverance! It is only upon God and our own swords that we must rely. Yet this is no reason to be disheartened. Rather the opposite. For it is better to know the truth of one’s situation than be deceived by false hopes. Our Faith and the honour of our Order are in our own hands. We shall not fail!”*

## **Repulsing the Attackers**

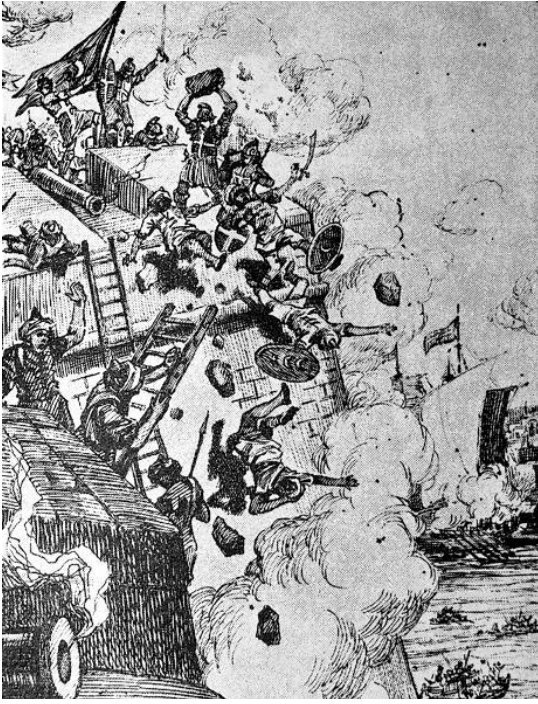
On 3<sup>rd</sup> June a new battery erected on Tigne Point opened up a steady fire on St. Elmo. Then the Janissaries attacked. They swarmed over the reduced Ravelin, wiping out the exhausted survivors. Then they stormed towards the gates of St. Elmo. The cannon protecting the portcullis opened fire on the advancing ranks of Janissaries. The defenders of St. Elmo used burning hoops to set ablaze the white robed Turks. Arquebus shot and blocks of stone met the Muslims and cauldrons of boiling pitch set many of the invaders aflame.

## **Relentless**

From dawn until noon, the battle raged around the bridge and walls of St. Elmo. Yet the flag of the Knights of St. John still waved above the ramparts engulfed in flames and smoke. Wave after wave of Janissaries was unleashed upon St. Elmo. By the time Mustapha called off his troops over 2,000 of the Janissaries lay dead, as opposed to 10 knights and 70 soldiers, who had died defending St. Elmo that day.

## **Under Fire**

A report from St. Elmo sent that night declared: *“Pounded by hostile cannon... in arms always, and prepared for combat, by day exposed to the burning sun, and by night to the cold and damp, privation of all kinds, from the blast of gunpowder, smoke, dust, wildfire, iron and stones, musketry, explosions of enormous batteries; insufficient nutriment, so disfigured that we hardly know each other any more, ashamed of retiring for wounds not manifestly quite dangerous, or almost mortal, those with the smaller bones dislocated, or shattered, and livid faces bruised with frightful sores, or extremely lame and limping woefully, those miserably bandaged around the head, arms in slings, strange contortions – such figures were frequent and nearly general...”* The Turkish gunfire was so heavy that it seemed as if *“they were determined to reduce the fortress to powder.”*



### **Bombarded**

On Thursday, another Turkish attack was blasted by a hail of bullets and incendiary weapons. Yet the defenders came under such sustained fire that they could barely show themselves above the battlements. When the commander suggested that the fortress be evacuated and burned to the ground, Valette reminded them: *“We swore obedience when we joined the Order. We swore also on the vows of Chivalry that our lives would be sacrificed for the Faith whenever, and wherever, the call ought come. Our brethren in St. Elmo must now accept that sacrifice.”*

### **Honour and Chivalry**

The knights sent a further message urging: *“Do not send any further reinforcements since they will be no more than dead men.”* They requested permission to storm the enemy and die honourably in battle, rather than remaining pounded behind the walls. Valette responded: *“The laws of Honour cannot necessarily be satisfied by throwing away one’s life when it seems convenient. A soldier’s duty is to obey. You will tell your comrades that they are to stay at their posts. They are to remain there, and they are not to sally forth.”*

### **Reinforcements**

La Valette sent another 15 knights and almost 100 soldiers to strengthen the garrison at St. Elmo. The Ottoman’s stormed the fort repeatedly and were repulsed time and again. The first great night attack of the siege took place on 10 June. When dawn broke, over 1,500 of the Sultan’s troops lay dead, or dying, in no-mans-land between the ravilin and the fort. St. Elmos’ losses that night totalled 60.

### **No Surrender**

The Turkish Commander-in-Chief offered the Christians that they might retire unmolested. Each one resolved to die where they stood and to give no quarter. On the night of 15 June, the whole Turkish fleet ringed the fort and 4,000 guns opened up on St. Elmo. Then the *Iayalars*, the fanatical corp. of *Jihadists* on drugs, launched a frenzied attack. They were followed by a hoard of Dervishes, then the Janissaries. Each attack was decimated and sent fleeing by the ferocious defence of the knights at St. Elmo. Another 1,000 of the Turks had died that day. 150 of the garrison of St. Elmo perished.

### **Volunteers for St. Elmo**

On the 18 June, La Valette called for more volunteers to reinforce St. Elmo. 30 knights and another 300 soldiers came forward and rowed across the harbour to the beleaguered and bombarded garrison of St. Elmo. On that same day, Drajut was mortally wounded by cannon shot. As *“the drawn sword of Islam”* was carried back to his tent, morale amongst the invading Turks was seriously weakened.

### **Repulsed**

As St. Elmo was pummelled by concentrated bombardment, it seemed incredible that anything could exist in that smoking ruin. As Janissaries breached the walls, Chevalier de Montserrat, directed cannon against the centre of the Janissary attack and saved the day. That day St. Elmo lost 200 men and the Turks over 2,000.

### **Defiance**

At dawn 23 June, the Ottoman galleys surrounded the ruined fort and unleashed more death and destruction upon the valiant defenders of St. Elmo. Less than 100 remained. They sang Hymns, prayed, defiantly tolled their Chapel bell and prepared to meet the Lord Jesus. Those who could no longer stand were seated in chairs, fully armed. Incredibly they held out for yet another hour. As Mustapha Pasha carried the banner of Sultan Suleiman to replace the flag of St. John at St. Elmo’s ruins, he gazed at the massive Fort St. Angelo across the bay and cried: *“Allah! If so small a son has cost us so dear, what price shall we have to pay for so large a father?”* The 35 days of ferocious courage of the defenders of St. Elmo had cost the invaders precious time and over 9,000 of their best troops.

### **Crucifixes and Cannonballs**

Mustapha Pasha ordered the bodies of the knights to be decapitated. Their heads were placed on stakes and their corpses were nailed to crosses to be floated across the harbour. As the headless bodies of crucified knights washed



up at the base of Fort St. Angelo, La Valette ordered their Turkish prisoners to be executed and their heads to be used as cannon balls to bombard the Turks. The message was clear: the knights would fight to the very death. No quarter would be given and none would be received.

### **Relief**

The morale of the defenders of Malta was lifted when 4 galleys from Sicily managed to evade the Turkish blockade and land a small relief force of 42 knights and 700 militia.

### **Bombardment**

Siege guns were transported to the heights of Corradino to begin the bombardment of Forts St. Angelo and St. Michael and the villages of Birgu and Senglea. 70 Cannon from Mount Sciberras, Gallows point, Tigne Point and Mount Salvatore and from the heights of Corradino, opened up a heavy crossfire on St. Angelo and St. Michael and on the villages of Birgu and Senglea.

### **A Tidal Waves of Turks**

On the morning of 15 July, Mustapha ordered the first major assault from both land and sea. The Algerian troops stormed the walls of St. Michael from the landward side, while the Turks landed troops to storm the seaward walls. The Algerians came on with a wild screaming rush. The Christians counter attacked and turned the tide of battle.

### **Sea Assault**

As Muslim invaders fled, Mustapha sent in his masterstroke: 1,000 of his elite Janissaries, aboard 10 large boats, to land at the northern wall while the Christian defenders were preoccupied defending the southern wall. What Mustapha did not know was that Valette had positioned a battery of artillery at the base of St. Angelo, to counter just such an eventuality. Chevalier de Guiral who commanded the 5-gun battery could scarcely believe his eyes as he saw the Janissaries sailing towards the muzzles of his guns.

### **Repulsing the Aggressors**

At the ideal target range, he ordered his men to open fire. 9 of the 10 boats were sunk and 800 Janissaries disappeared into the water. Only the 10<sup>th</sup> boat managed to survive and flee back across the harbour. The few Janissaries who managed to make it to land received "*St. Elmos pay*" (no mercy). The knights opened their gates and charged the Muslims sending them fleeing.

### **Incessant Bombardment**

Following the humiliation of 15 July, Mustapha adopted a more cautious approach, depending upon his artillery to reduce the walls and undermine the morale of the defenders by incessant bombardment. From North and South, from East and West, the Christian fortresses came under withering and sustained artillery barrage. The Turks gave the besieged no respite. The bombardment continued all day and night, throughout the last week of July. At dawn of 2 August, the Turks advanced while all their cannon thundered at once. People in Sicily, over 100 km away, could hear the cannon fire. It was the heaviest bombardment of the siege and it seemed impossible that any man could live through the sustained fire, let alone be in any state to fight, in the crumbling ruins of the forts.

### **Steadfast**

From every ridge and slope, Muslims swarmed forward like a tidal wave against the garrisons. Yet attack after attack was repulsed and Mustapha was once again forced to concede defeat. As his exhausted and decimated assault troops withdrew, Mustapha decided to subject the Christians to a further 5 days continuous bombardment before attempting the next assault. In all, over 130,000 cannon balls were fired from the Turkish guns against the Christian defenders on Malta. Throughout the siege men, women and children worked alongside the soldiers to rebuild the walls, repair the defences and prepare bombs and ammunition.

### **Slaughtered**

On 7 August, the Islamic assault was renewed. Like a tsunami, the enemy rushed upon Birgu and Senglea simultaneously. Yet as they swept over the ditch half filled with rubble from the walls, and through the breaches of walls blasted by continuous cannon fire, they were confronted by another interior wall! The troops who had poured in through the outer breaches now came under a withering fire from the garrison. Unable to turn back because of the weight of their numbers pressing behind them, they were trapped in a narrow killing ground where they were slaughtered in their hundreds.

### As Bold as Lions

Then the Christian defenders leapt from their entrenchments and stormed the faltering attackers. The Muslims turned and fled, slipping and sliding over the blood of their comrades and tripping over the mounds of dead bodies as they fled from the fight.

### Attacking the Attackers

Yet, while the Turkish attack on St. Angelo was routed, their assault on St. Michael was succeeding. Turkish flags began to appear along the ramparts. It was at this point that the governor of Mdina, the capital of Malta, launched his cavalry force against the lightly guarded Turkish headquarters. The Christians overwhelmed the sentries, killing every man that they could find, capturing or destroying a huge store of provisions and ammunition. As a messenger galloped up to Mustapha to inform him that a large Christian force had swarmed over their camp, Mustapha feared the worst. He assumed that this was the relief force from Sicily! Mustapha ordered a general retreat. In this way Fort St. Michael was saved.

### Isolated

However, there was no relief force. Valette called his Council together that night and informed his men: *“I will tell you now openly, my brethren, that there is no hope to be looked for, except in the succour of Almighty God – the only true Help. He who has looked after us until now will not forsake us, nor will He deliver us into the hands of the enemies of the holy Faith. We are soldiers, and we shall die fighting. If, by any evil chance, the enemy should prevail, we can expect no better treatment than our brethren who were in St. Elmo... Let no man think that there can be any question of receiving honourable treatment, or escaping with his life. If we are beaten, we shall all be killed. It would be better to die in battle than terribly and ignominiously at the hands of the Muslims.”*

### Determination

There was to be no more talk of relief forces. *“With the greatest devotion, with the firmest hope and faith that they would be received into glory, they resolved to die for their cause.”*

### Undermined

The Muslims began to tunnel under the defences to plant mines. With a tremendous explosion the bastion of Castile in Senglea collapsed. As the survivors staggered back in confusion, waves of Turks swarmed through the breach. Valette seized a pike and boldly ran from his command post towards the breach. Seeing the Grand Master running to the point of danger, all the knights and soldiers joined him in turning back the tide of Islamic advance.



### Resolute

A grenade exploded near Valette and knights rushed to defend him. *“Withdraw, Sire, to a place of safety!”* Valette refused. *“The enemy is already in retreat!”* Valette continued to advance against the enemy declaring: *“As long as their banners still wave in the wind, I will not withdraw.”* The knights and soldiers surged forward with incredible tenacity until, within a few minutes, the Turks were routed and fleeing in disarray. There was no darkness that night as gunfire lit up the sky and cannon pounded the walls. Yet the Christians stood firm and by dawn the Turks withdrew in defeat.

### The Tower

Now Mustapha unleashed his siege tower, which was higher than the walls. Janissaries used its platform to fire upon the defenders of Birgu. Valette had his workmen burrow a hole in the base of the wall facing the tower. They wheeled out a large cannon which fired 2 large cannon balls fastened together by a chain. The chainshot sliced through the structure, causing it to collapse, spilling Turks, incendiary grenades and fuel which set the giant tower ablaze.

### Seizing the Initiative

On 20 August, the Turks brought up another larger siege engine reinforced at the base with earth and stone work. The Knights of St. John stormed the tower in a surprise sortie and swept up the laddered floors eliminating the



Janissaries in a matter of minutes. They then turned this siege engine into an additional fighting platform to defend their walls. The two Turkish cannon on it poured fire into the dismayed Muslims.

### **Frustration**

At this point Mustapha learned that a large supply ship from North Africa to replenish their dwindling supplies of ammunition and food had been captured by a Christian galley. Despondency swept the Turkish camp. They were now running so short of gunpowder that they had to suspend the bombardment. Thousands of Turks were laid low with sickness. Even water and food was in short supply for the attackers. Mustapha determined to capture the capital Mdina and use it as his winter quarters.

### **Mdina**

Anticipating the Turkish intentions, the governor of Mdina dressed the civilians in soldiers' uniforms and had them patrol the ramparts along with the garrison. All available cannon were brought to the side to which the Turkish assault would approach. As the Muslims toiled up the long slopes to the city, they were shocked to see the walls bristling with cannon and armed men. As they came within range the cannon opened fire. The dismayed Turks halted and turned back: *"It is another impregnable position! Another St. Elmo!"*

### **Depression in the Turkish Camps**

The Turks launched another attack on St. Angelo and St. Michael on 1 September, but their men were, by now, so drained and disheartened, reduced in numbers and enfeebled by fever and dysentery that the attack failed almost before it had begun. *"It is not the will of Allah that we shall become masters of Malta."* was the general consensus.

### **The Long Awaited Relief Force**

On 5 September, Viceroy Don Garcia set sail from Sicily with a relief force made up of professional soldiers from all over Europe, including many Italians, Germans, French and other European volunteers. The relief consisted of 10,000 fighting men in 28 ships. When news of the relief arrived on 8 September, Mustapha's army was on the verge of mutiny. The Turkish fleet had lost the will to fight and did not even attempt to contest the landing.

### **Reversal of Fortunes**

As the invaders began to embark, Mustapha learned that the relief force was actually smaller than his army, so he ordered his men back ashore. The relief force charged the Muslims and in a fierce battle slaughtered 3,000 of Mustapha's army, driving the remainder to sea. Valette rushed light cannon up to St. Elmo and fired upon the retreating fleet. The day the Muslims fled Malta was 11 September.

### **Victory!**

The bells of the churches rang out over the shattered houses of Birgu and the victors sang *Te Deum* to the God who grants Victories. Nearly 250 Knights of the Order of St. John had lost their lives in the great siege. The survivors were all wounded, many crippled for life. Of the original 9,000 garrison, barely 600 were still capable of fighting. The Turks had lost over 30,000 men.

### **Defeat!**

The Sultan, Suleiman, was devastated when he heard of this defeat: *"Next year, I myself, the Sultan Suleiman, will lead an expedition against this accursed island. I will not spare one single inhabitant!"* The following year, before he could carry out this threat, Suleiman died at age 72. At the beginning of his reign he had been defeated before the walls of Vienna, 1529. Now at the end of his reign, his army had suffered the most humiliating and decisive defeat at Malta.

### **Decisive**

The Ottoman Turks never attempted to besiege Malta again. The failure of the siege denied Turkish forces control of Western Mediterranean and prevented their plans to conquer Southern Europe. The Great Siege of Malta was one of the most decisive victories in military history, changing the course of history and preventing the Western expansion of Turkish power.

### **Celebrations**

All Europe rejoiced in celebrating the victory and in Malta, the church bells rang out triumphantly. Honours were showered upon the Grand Master La Valette by all the kingdoms of Europe and at last the Knights of St. John received the generous financial contributions that they needed to rebuild the ruined cities and fortresses of Malta.

Italian Engineer, Francesco Zaparelli helped plan a magnificent citadel to be called Valette, named after the hero of the siege of Malta. Valette is built on Mount Sciberras, including the site of Fort St. Elmo. The Cathedral of St. John in Valette was described by Sir Walter Scott as: *“The most magnificent church in all of Europe.”*

### Inspiring Example

When he died, La Valette was buried in a great crypt in the Cathedral of St. John where the inscription reads: *“Hear lies La Valette, the scourge of Africa and Asia, the shield of Europe, whence he expelled the barbarians by his holy arms...”* The heroic defence of Malta against such overwhelming odds for over 4 months of relentless bombardment and assault inspired all of Europe to renewed efforts to defeat the Turkish menace.

### Victory Over Islam

In 1571 the Turkish fleet was decisively annihilated at the Battle of Lepanto. The last great Turkish threat to the heart of Europe was defeated at the gates of Vienna on 11 September 1683.

### Malta

Malta was one of the first nations in Europe to embrace Christianity, after the Apostle Paul’s shipwreck on the island. Malta has the highest church attendance of any country in Europe. Its area is a mere 316 km<sup>2</sup> consisting of three small islands, with dry limestone hills and no rivers. The total population is just over 400,000. Malta received its independence from Britain in 1964 and has been a Parliamentary Republic since 1974. Malta entered the European Union in 2004. Malta celebrates the 8 September as a national holiday to mark the lifting of the Great Siege.

*“God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in trouble. Therefore we will not fear, even though the earth be removed, and though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea; though its waters roar and be troubled, though the mountains shake with its swelling. There is a river whose streams make glad the city of God, the holy place of the Tabernacle of the Most High. God is in the midst of her, she shall not be moved; God shall help her, just at the break of dawn. The nations raged, the kingdoms were moved; He uttered His voice, the earth melted. The Lord of hosts is with us; the God of Jacob is our refuge.”* Psalm 46:1-7

### Bibliography:

- Siege of Malta* by Antonios Achelis, 1570
- The 1565 Great Siege of Malta* by Arnold Cassola, 1999
- The Siege of Malta 1565* by Francisco Belbi (translated Copenhagen 1961)
- Malta 1565: Last Battle of the Crusades* by Tim Pickles, Osprey Publishing, 1998
- Empires of the Sea: The Final Battle for the Mediterranean, 1521 – 1580* by Roger Crowley, London, Faber, 2008
- The Great Siege: Malta 1565*, Wordsworth, 1999
- Angels in Iron* by Nicholas Prata
- The Sword and the Scimitar* by David Ball
- Blood Rock* by James Jackson



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
 admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 15

### The BATTLE of LEPANTO

#### The Turkish Threat

The Battle of Lepanto on 7 October 1571, was one of the most critical naval battles in history. The Christian League forces were led by John of Austria, half brother of King Philip II. The island of Cyprus had fallen to Turkish invasion.

#### Turkish Treachery

The Turks had treacherously violated their agreement with the Greek and Italian defenders. After all supplies were exhausted and guarantees of safe conduct were offered, the Venetian garrison of Famagusta surrendered. The Turks then treacherously had all Venetian prisoners executed, the rest enslaved and the courageous Christian General Marco Antonio Bragadino, had his nose and ears cut off, his teeth broken and was flayed with whips until dead.



#### The Christian Coalition

As the Turks were planning further invasion of Europe, a coalition of Christian forces under John of Austria included 206 galleys and 6 galleasses. The Christian fleet consisted of 109 galleys and 6 galleasses from the Republic of Venice, 80 galleys from Spain, 12 Tuscan galleys of the order of St. Stephen, 3 galleys each from the Republic of Genoa, the Knights of Malta and the Duke of Savoy, as well as some privately owned galleys. The fleet was manned by almost 13,000 sailors, 43,000 rowers and 28,000 soldiers, including 10,000 Spanish, 7,000 German, 6,000 Italian and 5,000 Venetian soldiers. Most of the 43,000 rowers were free oarsmen.

#### The Turkish Fleet

The Christian League was outnumbered by the larger Turkish fleet of 230 galleys and 60 galliots. Under the command of Ali Pasha, the 13,000 experienced sailors were drawn from all the maritime nations of the Ottoman Empire: Egyptians, Syrians, Greeks and Berbers. The Turkish fleet included 34,000 soldiers.

#### Comparing the Opposing Forces

While the Christians were outnumbered in every other way, the Christian League had two significant advantages. Their infantry were definitely superior, and the Christians had 1,815 canons, compared to 750 among the Turkish vessels. The Christians also had more advanced muskets, while the Ottomans trusted in their greatly feared composite bowmen. Unlike the Christian fleet, the Turkish fleet was powered entirely by Christian slaves and prisoners of war forced to row in chains.

#### Confrontation

The five hour battle was fought at the edge of the Gulf of Patras, off Western Greece, near Corinth. The Ottoman forces were sailing westwards from their naval base in Lepanto, when they were confronted by the Christian League fleet which had sailed from Messina. The battle started when the Turks mistook the large galleasses to be merchant supply vessels and set out to pirate them. This proved to be disastrous because the galleasses were a new Venetian innovation, carrying a tremendous battery of artillery.

#### Devastating

The 6 Venetian galleasses sank up to 70 Turkish galleys before the rest of the fleet could engage. The galleasses succeeded in breaking up the Ottoman formations. Commander Barbarigo who led the left division, of mainly Venetian galleys, was killed by a Turkish arrow, but the Venetians turned to face the threat and held the line. Commander Pietro Giustiniani, of the Knights of St. John was severely wounded by five arrows.

#### Clash of Flagships

The flagships of John of Austria and Ali Pasha directly engaged and Austrian soldiers overwhelmed the Turkish janissaries seizing the *Sultana*. Ali Pasha was killed and beheaded. When his severed head was displayed on a pike from the Austrian flagship, it had a devastating effect on Turkish morale.

### Hand to Hand Combat

Spanish and German infantry flowed onto the Turkish vessels and in ferocious hand to hand combat, overwhelmed the Turks.

### Decisive Victory

Over 210 Turkish ships were lost. Of these, 117 galleys and 10 galliots were captured in good enough condition to be used by the Christian forces in future. The only prize captured by the Turks was one Venetian galley. On the Christian side, 20 galleys were destroyed and 30 damaged so seriously that they had to be scuttled. The Turkish losses were estimated at 30,000 dead and wounded and 15,000 prisoners. On the Christian side, 7,500 soldiers, sailors and rowers were dead, but twice as many Christian prisoners were freed from Turkish galleys.

### Turning the Turkish Tide

Lepanto was a crushing defeat for the Turks, who lost all but 50 of their ships. The Battle of Lepanto, following the Turkish defeat at the Great Siege of Malta in 1565, restricted Ottoman expansionism in the Mediterranean. It broke the threat of Muslim dominance at sea.

### A Turning Point

Lepanto was one of the great turning points in history. It ended the fear of the Turks that had threatened to overwhelm all of Europe. It stopped the Turkish advance. Lepanto was the last major naval battle between rowing vessels. Some Western historians have held Lepanto to be the most decisive naval battle anywhere on the globe since the Battle of Actium of 31BC. It certainly was a turning point in history. The Turkish Empire had lost so many experienced sailors, oarsmen, and soldiers that the fighting effectiveness of the Ottoman Empire was never able to recover. It is a fact that the Ottoman navy avoided major confrontations with Christian navies thereafter. The newly rebuilt Turkish navy rotted in their harbours. Historian Paul Davis wrote: *“This Turkish defeat stopped Turkey’s expansion into the Mediterranean, thus maintaining Western dominance. Confidence grew in the West that the Turks, previously unstoppable, could be beaten.”* Lepanto heralded the end of Turkish naval supremacy in the Mediterranean.

### The Intervention of God

As historian Otto Scott observed: *“Only God could have saved so divided a Europe against so determined and savage, rich and heavily armed a foe. After Lepanto the Turks remained a menace, but not an unconquerable one.”* Church bells tolled throughout Europe as many prayers of thanksgiving were offered by millions of grateful Europeans.





## Chapter 16

**The SPANISH ARMADA**

It was on 20 May 1588 that the Spanish Armada set sail to invade Protestant England.

**Phillip Launches the Armada**

Phillip II of Spain called the Catholic world to a Crusade against Protestant England. It was English gold and support that bolstered the Protestant cause in Scotland and Netherlands. With Phillip having conquered Portugal and expanded Spain's Atlantic power, he ordered his admirals to assemble an Armada which could crush the Protestants in England once and for all.

***"The Invincible Armada"***

By May 1588 Phillip had prepared a fleet consisting of 130 ships, 2,400 cannon and over 30,000

men. This was the greatest naval force the world had yet seen. It was called "*The Invincible Armada.*" The plan was for the Armada to sail up the English Channel, pick up troops from the Spanish Netherlands under the Duke of Parma and escorting his invasion barges across the Channel to conquer England. Queen Elizabeth ordered the entire nation to pray for God's intervention and protection against the invading Spanish Armada.





## What was at Stake

Had the Spanish Armada succeeded, today's world would be unrecognizable. Spain was the Catholic superpower. England led the Protestant cause. All Europe feared Spain. It had overwhelmed all of its adversaries – even the Turk. Had the Armada succeeded the whole subsequent history of England and Scotland would have been dramatically changed. There would have been no Protestant North America and no Anglo-Saxon civilization. It would have made Spain the unrivalled world superpower and Spanish the world's language.

## One of the Greatest Speeches Ever Made

An English army of almost 20,000 men were assembled at Tilbury to oppose the anticipated 30,000 men in the Spanish Armada. In addition to this a further 15,000 Spanish troops under the brutal Duke of Parma were to be ferried across the Channel in barges from the Netherlands.

Queen Elizabeth addressed her soldiers at

Tilbury with these words: *“I am come amongst you, as you see, resolved, in the midst and heat of the battle, to live or die amongst you all, to lay down for my God and for my Kingdom and for my people, my honour and my blood, even in the dust. I know I have the body of a weak and feeble woman, but I have the heart and stomach of a king and of a King of England too and think foul scorn that Parma or Spain or any prince of Europe should dare to invade the borders of my realm; to which, rather than any dishonour should grow by me, I myself will take up arms, I myself will be your general, judge and rewarder of every one of your virtues in the field.”*

## The English Navy

The Royal Navy had been under the control of Sir John Hawkins since 1573. He had rebuilt and reorganized the Navy that had survived from the days of Henry VIII. The castles which had towered above the galleon decks had been cut down. The keels were deepened. Designs concentrated on sea-worthiness and speed. Most significantly of all, Hawkins had installed heavier long-range guns. Knowing that he could not out-produce the Spanish in terms of the size and number of galleons, Hawkins was determined to batter the enemy from a distance with the superior range of his cannon. The Spanish Armada carried many cannon (2,400) but these were really only suitable for close-range salvos before grappling and boarding enemy vessels for hand-to-hand combat.



CHART OF THE ARMADA'S COURSE.  
Pine's Engraving, 1739, of Tapestry then in House of Lords.



## Against All Odds

To oppose the Armada's 130 ships, Hawkins had 34 vessels, carrying 6,000 men. His commanders were Lord Howard and Sir Francis Drake. (It was Sir Francis Drake's famous raid on the Spanish Armada in port at Cardiz in 1587 which had delayed the sailing of the Armada by destroying a large quantity of ships and stores. This was described as *“the singeing of the King of Spain's beard!”*)

## The Armada Sets Sail

The Armada finally left Tagus on 20 May. It was afflicted by severe storms. Two of their 1,000 ton ships lost their masts. They had to put in to refit at Carunna and could not sail again until 12 July.



### **Fires Over England**

An Intelligence Report of 21 July from Howard to Walsingham reported sighting 120 sail vessels including galleys “*and many ships of great burden.*” Beacons were lit all across England to alert the population to the danger. Church bells rang. Special services were held to pray for God’s protection.

### **Engaging the Enemy**

The English engaged the Armada in a four-hour battle, pounding away with their long range guns, but staying out of range of the Armada’s cannon. There was a further engagement on 23 July and then off the Isle of Wight on 25 July. The guns of the English ships raked the decks of the galleons killing many of the crew and soldiers.

### **Fire Ships Cause Panic**

On 28 July the Spanish Armada anchored in the English Channel near Calais. As the English Navy lay upwind from the Spanish, they determined to set adrift 8 fire-ships, filled with explosives, to drift into the crowded Spanish fleet at anchor. As the Spanish crews awoke to see these flaming ships drifting towards their anchored Armada, they panicked. Spanish captains cut their cables and made for the open sea. Many collisions followed. The surviving ships of the Armada headed eastwards to Gravelines expecting to link up with Parma’s troops and barges, ready to be escorted for the invasion of England. But the tides and winds were against them and they found no sign of Parma’s troops in Dunkirk harbour.

### **Decisive Engagement**

At this point the Royal Navy caught up with the Spaniards and a long and desperate fight raged for eight hours. Howard’s men sank or damaged many of the Spanish ships and drove others onto the banks. The English reported that at this point they had completely exhausted their ammunition, otherwise scarcely a Spanish ship would have escaped.

### **The Devastated Armada**

The remnants of the defeated Armada now fled northwards seeking to sail around the north of Scotland in order to reach Spain. They faced mountainous seas and racing tides. Westerly winds drove two of the galleons to wreck upon the coast of Norway. Ships that had been shattered by the English cannonades were now struck by storms. Another 17 ships were wrecked on the coast of Britain. Most of the once mighty Armada were lost before the battered survivors finally reached Spanish ports in October.

### **God Blew and They Were Scattered**

Incredibly, the English had not lost a single ship and scarcely 100 men in the ferocious engagements against the Spanish Armada. Though limited in supplies and ships, the tactics of Hawkins and his admirals Howard and Drake, had been crowned with success. A medal struck to commemorate the victory bears the inscription: “*Afflavit Deus et dissipantur*” (God blew and they were scattered!)

### **Answers to Prayer**

While churches throughout England were holding extraordinary prayer meetings, devastating storms had wrecked the Spanish plans. The Duke of Parma’s invasion barges from Holland were prevented from linking up with the Armada by Dutch action. The English tactic of setting fire ships amongst the huge Spanish galleons created confusion. Courageous action by the English seamen and continuing storms decimated and broke up the Spanish Armada. Most of what was left of Phillip’s fleet was devastated by more storms







off the coast of Scotland and Ireland. Only a miserable remnant of the once proud Armada limped back into the Ports of Spain. 51 Spanish ships and 20,000 men had been lost. The greatest superpower at the time had suffered a crippling blow. The defeat of the Spanish Armada in 1588 marked a great watershed in history. It signalled the decline of Catholic Spain and Portugal and the rise of Protestant England and Holland.

### **A Victory for the Protestant Reformation**

Before 1588 the world powers were Spain and Portugal. These Roman Catholic empires dominated the seas and the overseas possessions of Europe. Only after the English defeated the Spanish Armada did the possibility arise of Protestant missionaries crossing the seas. As the Dutch and British grew in military and naval strength, they were able to challenge the Catholic dominance of the seas and the new continents. Foreign missions now became a distinct possibility. Had the Spanish Armada not been defeated, Protestantism could have been extinguished in England and Holland. And then the whole future of North America would have been far different with Catholicism dominating instead of the Protestant Pilgrims.

### **A Watershed Event**

By the grace of God, the destruction of the Spanish Armada in 1588 saved the Protestant Reformation in England from Spanish invasion, oppression and the Inquisition. The victory of Protestant England and Protestant Holland against Catholic Spain was absolutely essential for the founding of the United States of America and of the Republic of South Africa.

Dr Peter Hammond

#### **Bibliography:**

*A History of the English Speaking People* by Sir Winston Churchill, Cassel and Co., 1956.

*The Great Christian Revolution* by Otto Scott, 1995.

*Elizabeth I* by Jacob Abbott, 1876.

*The Spanish Armadas* by Winston Graham, Collins, 1972.

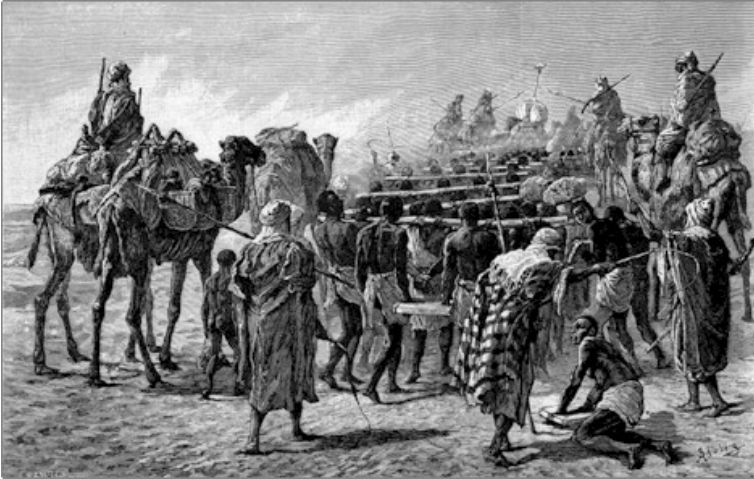
See also: [Sir Walter Raleigh](#)



**Frontline Fellowship** P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 17

**SLAVERY – What You've Never Been Told**

While much has been written concerning the Trans-Atlantic slave trade, surprisingly little attention has been given to the Islamic slave trade across the Sahara, the Red Sea and the Indian Ocean. While the European involvement in the Trans Atlantic slave trade to the Americas lasted for just over three centuries, the Arab involvement in the slave trade has lasted fourteen centuries, and in some parts of the Muslim world is still continuing to this day.

**Contrasts in Captivity**

A comparison of the Islamic slave trade to the American slave trade reveals some interesting contrasts. While two out of every three slaves

shipped across the Atlantic were men, the proportions were reversed in the Islamic slave trade. Two women for every man were enslaved by the Muslims.

While the mortality rate for slaves being transported across the Atlantic was as high as 10%, the percentage of slaves dying in transit in the Trans Sahara and East African slave trade was between 80% and 90%!

While almost all the slaves shipped across the Atlantic were for agricultural work, most of the slaves destined for the Muslim Middle East were for sexual exploitation as concubines, in harems, and for military service.

While many children were born to slaves in the Americas, and millions of their descendants are citizens in Brazil and the USA to this day, very few descendants of the slaves that ended up in the Middle East survive.

While most slaves who went to the Americas could marry and have families, most of the male slaves destined for the Middle East were castrated, and most of the children born to the women were killed at birth.

It is estimated that possibly as many as 11 million Africans were transported across the Atlantic (95% of which went to South and Central America, mainly to Portuguese, Spanish and French possessions. Only 5% of the slaves went to the United States).

However, at least 28 million Africans were enslaved in the Muslim Middle East. As at least 80% of those captured by Muslim slave traders were calculated to have died before reaching the slave markets, it is believed that the death toll from the 14 centuries of Muslim slave raids into Africa could have been over 112 million. When added to the number of those sold in the slave markets, the total number of African victims of the Trans-Saharan and East African slave trade could be significantly higher than 140 million people.

**The Absence of Arabic Abolitionists**

While Christian Reformers spearheaded the anti-slavery abolitionist movements in Europe and North America, and Great Britain mobilised her Navy, throughout most of the 19<sup>th</sup> Century, to intercept slave ships and set the captives free, there was no comparable opposition to slavery within the Muslim world.

Even after Britain outlawed the slave trade in 1807 and Europe abolished the slave trade in 1815, Muslim slave traders enslaved a further 2 million Africans. This despite vigorous British Naval activity and military intervention to limit the Islamic slave trade. By some calculations the number of victims of the 14 centuries of Islamic slave trade could exceed 180 million.

Nearly 100 years after President Abraham Lincoln issued the Emancipation Proclamation in America, and 130 years after all slaves within the British Empire were set free by parliamentary decree, Saudi Arabia and Yemen, in 1962, and Mauritania in 1980, begrudgingly removed legalised slavery from their statute books. And this only after international pressure was brought to bear. Today numerous international organisations document that slavery still continues in some Muslim countries.

**The Pagan Origins of Slavery**

Slavery long predated Christianity and many of the early Christians were slaves in the Roman Empire. Without exception, the pre-Christian world accepted slavery as normal and desirable. The Greek philosopher Aristotle claimed: *“From the hour of their birth, some are marked out for subjection, others for rule.”* The great civilisations

of Mesopotamia, Babylon, Egypt, Greece, Rome, and all the civilisations in Central America and Africa were built upon slave labour.

People became slaves by being an insolvent debtor, or sold into slavery by their parents, or by being born to slave parents, or by being captured in war, or through kidnapping by slave raiders and pirates. Slave dealing was an accepted way of life, fully established in all societies. Most of these slaves were white people, or Europeans. In fact the *very* word “*slave*”, comes from the people of Eastern Europe, the Slavs.

St. Patrick, the English missionary to the Irish, was once a slave himself, kidnapped from his home and taken to Ireland against his will. Patrick spoke out strongly against slavery. He wrote: “*But it is the women kept in slavery who suffer the most.*”

The Greeks, from whom we derive so many modern, humanistic ideas, were utterly dependent on slavery. Even Plato’s *Republic* was firmly based on slave labour. Plato said that 50 or more slaves represented the possessions of a wealthy man.

Under Roman law, when a slave owner was found murdered, all his slaves were to be executed. In one case, when a certain Pedanius Secundas was murdered, all 400 of his slaves were put to death.

Before the coming of Christ, the heathen nations despised manual work and confined it to slaves. When Christ was born, half of the population of the Roman Empire were slaves. Three quarters of the population of Athens were slaves.

Slavery was indigenous to African and Arab countries before it made its way to Europe. Slavery was widely practiced by the tribes of the American Indians long before Columbus set foot on the shores of the New World. Ethiopia had slavery until 1942, Saudi Arabia until 1962, Peru until 1968, India until 1976 and Mauritania until 1980. What is also seldom remembered is that many black Americans in the 19<sup>th</sup> Century owned slaves. For example, according to the United States census of 1830, in just the one town of Charleston, South Carolina, 407 black Americans owned slaves themselves.

### **The Christian Roots of Liberty**

But Jesus revolutionized labour. By taking up the axe, the saw, the hammer and the plane, our Lord endured labour with a new dignity. Christianity undercut slavery by giving dignity to work. By reforming work, Christianity transformed the entire social order.

Our Lord less began His ministry in Nazareth with these words: “***The Spirit of the Lord is on Me ...to proclaim freedom for the prisoners ... and release to the oppressed.***” Luke 4:18

When the apostle Paul wrote to Philemon, concerning his escaped slave, he urged him to welcome back Onesimus “***no longer as a slave, but...as a dear brother... as a man and as a brother in the Lord.***” Philemon 16.

Because of these and other Scriptural commands to love our neighbour, to be a good Samaritan and to do for others what you would want them to do for you, Christians like William Wilberforce, John Newton, William Carey, David Livingstone, Lord Shaftsbury and General Charles Gordon worked tirelessly to end the slave trade, stop child labour, and set the captives free.

From the very beginning of the Christian Church, Christians freed slaves. During the 2<sup>nd</sup> and 3<sup>rd</sup> Centuries many tens of thousands of slaves were freed by people who converted to Christ. St. Melania was said to have emancipated 8,000 slaves, St. Ovidius freed 5,000, Chromatius freed 1,400, Hermes 1,200. Many of the Christian clergy at Hippo under St. Augustine “*freed their dares as an act of piety.*” In AD315, the Emperor Constantine, just two years after he issued the edict Milan legalising Christianity, imposed the death penalty on those who stole children to bring them up as slaves.

The Emperor Justinian abolished all laws that prevented the freeing of slaves. St. Augustine (354-430) saw slavery as the product of sin and as contrary to God’s Divine plan (The City of God). St. Chrysostom in the 4<sup>th</sup> Century, taught that when Christ came He annulled slavery. He proclaimed “*in Christ Jesus there is no slave... therefore it is not necessary to have a slave...buy them, and after you have taught them some skill by which they can maintain themselves, set them free.*”

For centuries, throughout the Middle Ages, bishops and church councils recommended the redemption of captive slaves, and for five centuries the Trinitarian monks redeemed Christian slaves from Moorish (Muslim) servitude.

In 1102AD, the London Church Council outlawed slavery and the slave trade. By the 12<sup>th</sup> Century slaves in Europe were rare, and by the 14<sup>th</sup> Century slavery was almost unknown on the continent of Europe.



## The Islamic Slave Trade

However, the with birth of Islam came a rebirth of the slave trade. As Ronald Segal in *"Islam's Black Slaves"* documents: *"When Islam conquered the Persian Sassanid Empire and much of the Byzantine Empire, including Syria and Egypt, in the 7<sup>th</sup> Century, it acquired immense quantities of gold...stripping churches and monasteries.. either directly or by taxes, payable in gold, imposed on the clergy and looting gold from...tombs...the state encouraged the search and sanctioned the seizure, in return for a fifth of the finds."*

Segal notes: *"Female slaves were required in considerable numbers for...musicians, singers and dancers...many more were bought for domestic workers ...and many were in demand as concubines. The harems of rulers could be enormous. The harem of Abdal Rahman III (912 - 961) in Cordoba contained over 6,000 concubines! And the one in the Fatimid Palace in Cairo had twice as many..."*



*Islam's Black Slaves* also reveals that the castration of male slaves was common place. *"The Caliph in Baghdad at the beginning of the 10<sup>th</sup> Century had 7,000 black eunuchs and 4,000 white eunuchs in his palace."* It was noted that there were widespread *"homosexual relations"* as well. *Islam's Black Slaves* notes that Islamic teachers throughout the centuries consistently defended slavery: *"For there must be masters and slaves."* Others noted that blacks *"lack self-control and steadiness of mind and they are overcome by fickleness, foolishness and ignorance. Such are the blacks who live in the extremity of the land of Ethiopia, the Nubians, Zanj and the like."*

Ibn Khaldun (1332 – 1406) the pre-eminent Islamic medieval historian and social thinker wrote: *"The Negro nations are as a rule submissive to slavery...because they have attributes that are quite similar to dumb animals."*

By the Middle Ages, the Arab word *"abd"* was in general use to denote a black slave while the word *"mamluk"* referred to a white slave. Even as late as the 19<sup>th</sup> Century, it was noted that in Mecca *"there are few families...that do not keep slaves...they all keep mistresses in common with their lawful wives."*

It was noted that black slaves were castrated *"based on the assumption that the blacks had an ungovernable sexual appetite."*

When the Fatimids came to power they slaughtered all the tens of thousands of black military slaves and raised an entirely new slave army. Some of these slaves were conscripted into the army at age ten. From Persia to Egypt to Morocco, slave armies from 30,000 to up to 250,000 became common-place.

Even Ronald Segal, who is most sympathetic to Islam and clearly prejudiced against Christianity, admits that well over 30 million black Africans would have died at the hands of Muslim slave traders or ended up in Islamic slavery.

The Islamic slave trade took place across the Sahara Desert, from the coast of the Red Sea, and from East Africa across the Indian Ocean. The Trans-Sahara trade was conducted along six major slave routes. Just in the 19<sup>th</sup> Century, for which we have more accurate records, 1.2 million slaves were brought across the Sahara into the Middle East, 450,000 down the Red Sea and 442,000 from East African coastal ports. That is a total of 2 million black slaves - just in the 1800's. At least 8 million more were calculated to have died before reaching the Muslim slave markets.

*Islam's Black Slaves* records: *"In the 1570s, a Frenchman visiting Egypt found many thousands of blacks on sale in Cairo on market days. In 1665 Father Antonios Gonzalis, a Spanish/Belgian traveller, reported 800 – 1,000 slaves on sale in the Cairo market on a single day. In 1796, a British traveller reported a caravan of 5,000 slaves departing from Darfur. In 1838, it was estimated that 10,000 to 12,000 slaves were arriving in Cairo each year."* Just in the Arabic plantations off the East Coast of Africa, on the islands of Zanzibar and Pemba, there were 769,000 black slaves.

In the 19<sup>th</sup> Century the East African black slave trade included 347,000 slaves shipped to Arabia, Persia and India; 95,000 slaves were shipped to the Arab plantations in the Mascareme islands.

Segal notes *"The high death rate and low birth rate among black slaves in the Middle East and the astonishingly low birth rate amongst black slave women"* in North Africa and the Middle East. *"Islamic civilisation ...lagged increasingly behind the West in protecting public health. The arithmetic of the Islamic black slave trade must also not ignore the lives of those men, women and children taken or lost during the procurement, storage and transport..."*

*the sale of a single captive for slavery might represent a loss of ten in the population from defenders killed in attacks on villages, the deaths of women and children from related famine and the loss of children, the old and the sick, unable to keep up with their captors or killed along the way in hostile encounters, or dying of sheer misery."*

One British explorer encountered over 100 human skeletons from a slave caravan en route for Tripoli.

The explorer, Heinrich Barth, recorded that a slave caravan lost 40 slaves in the course of a single night at Benghazi.

The British explorer, Richard Lander, came across a group of 30 slaves in West Africa, all of them stricken with smallpox, all bound neck to neck with twisted strips of bullock hide.

One caravan with 3,000 proceeding from the coast in East Africa, lost two thirds of its number from starvation, disease and murder.

In the Nubian desert, one slave caravan of 2,000 slaves literally vanished as every slave died.

### **An Eyewitness Account**

In 1818, Captain Lyon of the Royal Navy reported that the Al-Mukani in Tripoli *"waged war on all its defenceless neighbours and annually carried off 4,000 to 5,000 slaves...a piteous spectacle! These poor oppressed beings were, many of them, so exhausted as to be scarcely able to walk, their legs and feet were much swelled, and by their enormous size formed a striking contrast with their emaciated bodies. They were all borne down with loads of firewood, and even poor little children, worn to skeletons by fatigue and hardships, were obliged to bear their burden, while many of their inhuman masters with dreadful whips suspended from their waist... all the traders speak of slaves as farmers do of cattle... the defenceless state of the Negro kingdoms to the southward are temptations too strong to be resisted, a force is therefore annually sent... to pillage these defenceless people, to carry them off as slaves, burn their towns, kill the aged and infants, destroy their crops and inflict on them every possible misery. . .all slavery is for an unlimited time... none of their owners ever moved without their whips - which were in constant use. . .drinking too much water, bringing too little wood or falling asleep before the cooking was finished, were considered nearly capital crimes, and it was in vain for these poor creatures to plead the excuse of being tired. Nothing could withhold the application of the whip. No slaves dared to be ill or unable to walk, but when the poor sufferer dies, the master suspects that there must have been something 'wrong inside' and regrets not having liberally applied their usual remedy of burning the belly with a red-hot iron."*

Records for Morocco in 1876 show that market prices for slaves varied from £10 (\$48) to £30 (\$140). Female slaves comprised the vast majority of sales with *"attractive virgins"* fetching between £40 to £80 (\$192 - \$386). It was reported that *"a considerable majority of the slaves crossing the Sahara were destined to become concubines in North Africa, the Middle East and occasionally even further afield."*

### **Christian Slaves - Muslim Masters**

Segal also observed that: *"White slaves from Christian Spain, Central and Eastern Europe"* were also shipped into the Middle East and served in the *"palaces of rulers and the establishments of the rich."* He records that: *"All Slavic eunuchs...are castrated in that region and the operation is performed by Jewish merchants."*

*Historian Robert Davis in his book "Christian Slaves, Muslim Masters - White Slavery In the Mediterranean, the Barbary Coast and Italy", estimates that North African Muslim pirates abducted and enslaved 1 million Europeans between 1530 and 1780. These white Christians were seized in a series of*



*raids which depopulated coastal towns from Sicily to Cornwall. Thousands of white Christians in coastal areas were seized every year to work as galley slaves, labourers and concubines for Muslim masters in what is today Morocco, Tunisia, Algeria and Libya. Villages and towns on the coast of Italy, Spain. Portugal and France were the hardest hit, but the Muslim slave raiders also seized people as far afield as Britain, Ireland and Iceland. They even captured 130 American seamen from ships they boarded in the Atlantic between 1785 and 1793.*





According to one report, 7,000 English people were abducted between 1622 to 1644, many of them ship crews and passengers. But the Corsairs also landed on unguarded beaches, often at night to snatch the unwary. Almost all the inhabitants of the village of Baltimore, in Ireland, were captured in 1631, and there were other raids in Devon and Cornwall. Many of these white, Christian slaves were put to work in quarries, building sites and galleys and endured malnutrition, disease and mistreatment at the hands of their Muslim slave masters. Many of them were used for public works such as building harbours.

Female captives were sexually abused in palace harems and others were held as hostages and bargained for ransom. *“The most unlucky ended up stuck and forgotten out in the desert, in some sleepy town such as Suex, or in Turkish Sultanate galleys, where some slaves towed for decades without ever setting foot on shore.”* Professor Davis estimates that up to 1.25 million Europeans were enslaved by Muslim slave raiders between 1,500 to 1,800.

### **The European Slave Trade**

While Islam dominated the slave trade from the 7<sup>th</sup> to the 15<sup>th</sup> Century, between 1519 and 1815 Europe also joined in this trade in human flesh. And it was those European nations which had suffered the most at the hands of Muslim slave traders, and under centuries of Muslim military occupation, Spain and Portugal, who dominated the European slave trade.

It was the enemies of the Reformation who brought Europe into this disgraceful trade. Emperor Charles V (whom Martin Luther defied with his historic *“My conscience is captive to the Word of God...here I stand I can do no other...”* speech) of the Holy Roman Empire who first authorised Europe’s involvement in the slave trade in 1519. Because of Pope Alexander VI’s Line of Demarcation Bill of 1493 which barred Spain from Africa, Spain issued Asientos (a monopoly) to other nations to supply slaves for her South American colonies. First Portugal had this lucrative franchise, then the Dutch, then the French. Finally, by the treaty of Utrecht 1713, the Asieritos was transferred from France to *Britain*. Britain’s involvement in slavery was first authorised in 1631 by King Charles I (who was later executed by Parliament). His son, Charles II, reintroduced it by Royal Charter in 1672.

According to *“The Slave Trade”* by Hugh Thomas, approximately 4 million (35.4%) went to Portuguese controlled Brazil; 2.5 million (22.1%) to the Spanish nations of South and Central America; 2 million (17.7%) to the British West Indies (mostly Jamaica); 1.6 million (14.1%) to French West Indies; half a million (4.4%) to Dutch West Indies and half a million (4.4%) to North America.

### **The American Slave Trade**

It is extraordinary that, considering that less than 5% of all the Trans Atlantic slaves ended up in North America, the vast majority of films, books and articles concerning the slave trade concentrate only on the American involvement in the slave trade, as though slavery was a uniquely American aberration. However the vastly greater involvement of Spain and France seem to be largely ignored. Even more so the far greater and longer running Islamic slave trade into the middle East has been so ignored as to make it one of history’s best-kept secrets.

We tend to focus on what happened in North America because the United States would eventually fight a war, in part over slavery, and because of the enormous and vocal American opposition to slavery. This was in sharp contrast to the indifference that Muslims, Africans and many Europeans evidenced towards it.

### **The African Slave Trade**

The legends of European slave raiders venturing into the jungles of Africa to capture free peoples are generally just that: myths.

The embarrassing fact of history, is that the Europeans did not have to use any force to obtain these slaves. The slaves were *“sold”* by their black owners. There was no need for the slave raiders to risk their lives or venture into the jungles of Africa, they simply purchased the people from African chiefs and Muslim slave traders at the coast.

However, while the slave trade and slavery itself was always criticised vigorously in Britain and America, no comparable criticism was evident in the Muslim Middle East or amongst the African tribes which sold their own people, and neighbouring tribes, into slavery. Almost all of the African slaves transported across the Atlantic were captured and sold by African rulers and merchants.

Many chiefs found it more profitable to sell their enemies, criminals and debtors than to kill or imprison them. Many were weaker neighbouring tribes conquered for the express purpose of selling their people into slavery. The disgraceful fact is that there were three equally guilty partners in the crime of the Trans Atlantic slave trade: pagan African chiefs, Muslim Arabs and Christian Europeans.

The Trade, as it became known, involved a triangular voyage. Slave ships sailed from Bristol or Liverpool loaded with cloths, beads, muskets, iron bars and brandy. This merchandise was then traded in West Africa in exchange for slaves. Mostly African chiefs sold their own people, or engaged in wars and slave raids against neighbouring tribes to capture victims for this trade. Often professional Arab slave traders provided the victims.

The middle passage transported the slaves to the West Indies. Here the slaves were sold and the ships loaded with spices, rum, molasses and sugar. The third leg of the journey was the return to England. The average Englishman on the street was kept in the dark as to what was actually happening on the middle passage, until, in 1785, Thomas Clarkson's landmark study *"Slavery and Commerce In the Human Species"* was first published at Cambridge. According to Clarkson's research, 10% of the slaves would normally die during the middle passage. Strong men would fetch as much as £40 while the women and children were sold in cheap batches with the sick and weak men. In England 18,000 people were employed simply on making the goods to trade for slaves in Africa. This trade constituted 4.4% of British exports.

### **Wilberforce's War**

On Sunday 28 October 1787, William Wilberforce wrote in his diary: *"God Almighty has set before me two great objects, the suppression of the slave trade and the Reformation of society."* For the rest of his life, William Wilberforce dedicated his life as a Member of Parliament to opposing the slave trade and working for the abolition of slavery throughout the British Empire.

On 22 February 1807, twenty years after he first began his crusade, and in the middle of Britain's war with France, Wilberforce and his team's labours were rewarded with victory. By an overwhelming 283 votes for to 16 against, the motion to abolish the slave trade was carried in the House of Commons. The parliamentarians leapt to their feet with great cheers and gave Wilberforce the greatest ovation ever seen in British history. William bent forward in his seat, his head in his hands, tears of gratitude streaming down his face.

In 1809, the British government mobilised its Navy to search suspected slave ships, even foreign vessels on the high seas. In 1810, the British Parliament declared slave trading a felony, punishable by fourteen years hard labour. In 1814, the British representative at the Congress of Vienna insisted on the abolition of the slave trade being included in the International Treaty. This Treaty was signed by all the European powers on 9 June 1815. In 1825, Britain passed a bill making slave trading punishable by death.

Finally, just three days before William Wilberforce died, by an Act of Parliament in 1833, the British abolished slavery itself - setting all 700,000 slaves in British overseas territories free. Wilberforce's lifetime campaign of 59 years was now fully successful. *"Thank God that I've lived to witness the day in which England is willing to give 20 million pounds sterling for the abolition of slavery!"* he exclaimed. Within three days he died rejoicing. (For the story of how slavery was abolished see the chapter on William Wilberforce-Missionary to Parliament in *The Greatest Century of Missions*).

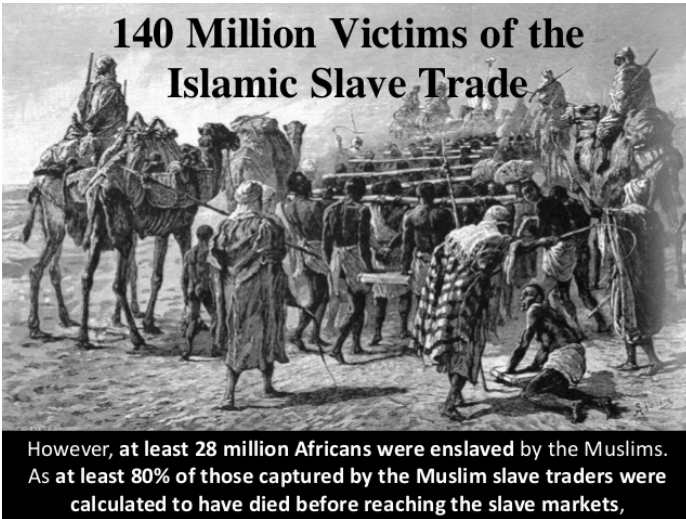
The *"History of European Morals"* suggests that *"the unweary, unostentatious and inglorious crusade of England against slavery may probably be regarded as among the three or four perfect virtuous pages comprised in the history of nations."*

The abolition of slavery was one of the great turning points in history. And the long and vigorous crusade by the British Navy throughout the 19<sup>th</sup> Century against the slave trade tanks as one of the most extraordinary and unselfish applications of national policy ever seen in the history of nations.

### **Set Free to Serve Christ**

One of the many fruits of William Wilberforce's life long crusade against the slave trade was that Samuel Ajayi Crowther, who was born in 1807 (the year Great Britain abolished the slave trade) in Yorubaland (modern Western Nigeria) was rescued by a British naval squadron. When Samuel was just thirteen years old, he was captured by Muslim slave traders for transport across the Atlantic, but rescued by the Navy. Samuel received an education in Sierra Leone, where he was converted to Christ, and after further education in England he was ordained as a minister of the Church of England for service with the Church Missionary Society.





Samuel participated in the expedition up the Niger River Valley to overcome the ravages of the slave industry there. Of the 145 Europeans on that expedition, 130 were struck down with Malaria, and 40 died. Yet the expedition succeeded in establishing a Missionary Centre at Fourah Bay for training slaves to evangelise was built on the very place where a slave market had once stood. The rafters of the roof were made almost entirely from the masts of old slave ships.

Samuel Crowther was one of first four students to graduate from Fourah Bay's College, Sub-Saharan Africa's first university In 1864. Samuel Crowther was ordained as the first African Bishop of the Church of England in an overflowing Canterbury cathedral. Today there are

eighteen times more Anglicans worshipping in church every Sunday in Nigeria than there are in Great Britain.

### Livingstone's Travels

However, as the British Navy was defeating the slave trade in the Atlantic, the East African slave trade was increasing. It was missionary explorer David Livingstone whose graphic descriptions brought the ravages of the East African slave trade to light. His *Missionary Travels and Narrative of an Expedition to the Zambezi* exposed the horrors of the slave trade: *"Two of the women had been shot the day before for attempting to untie their thongs. One woman had her infants brains knocked out because she could not carry her load and it; and a man was dispatched with an axe because he had broken down with fatigue... those taken out of the country are but a very small section of the sufferers. We never realised the atrocious nature of the traffic until we saw it at the fountain head, 'There truly Satan has his seat.' Besides those actually captured thousands are killed and die of their wounds and famine, driven from their villages by the internecine war waged for slaves with their own clansmen and neighbours, slain by the lust of gain, which is stimulated, be it remembered always, by the slave purchases of Cuba and elsewhere."*

### A Trade in Human Misery

The British and Foreign Anti-Slavery Society reported that most slaves were captured in the Lake Niassa area (Malawi and Mozambique), the Bahr El Ghazal region and in areas of Ethiopia. Slaves were taken to East African markets like Zanzibar, Kilwa and Quelimane, and then shipped to Turkey, India, Saudi Arabia, Yemen, Oman, Iraq, Iran and to the islands of Pemba, Reunion and Madagascar.

The *Anti-Slavery Reporter* estimated the Muslim slave trade as exporting 63,000 slaves per year. Some estimates went as high as 500,000 slaves exported in a single year. One researcher, Ralph Austen calculated that between 1830 and 1861 imports of slaves to the Persian Gulf averaged 3,700 to 3,100 per annum. This same researcher noted that about 8,855 slaves a year were retained as slaves on the East African coast as slaves of African slave masters.

Few authors dared describe the horrors involved in the Trans-Sahara slave trade: kidnapping and castrating young boys to be sold as eunuchs (*"the living dead"*) in the homes of wealthy Arab landlords and force marching young women across endless miles of scorching sand in the Sahara desert to become slave concubines, most dying in transit. The Muslim slave trade typically dealt in the sale of castrated male slaves: eunuchs. Eunuchs were created by completely amputating the scrotum and penis of eight to twelve year old African boys. Hundreds of thousands of young boys bled to death during this gory procedure. The survival rate from this process ranged from 1 in 10 to 1 in 30. These castrated boys brought the highest price at the slave market.

### Sharia Law and Slavery

Islam's Black Slaves notes: *"the Quran stipulated that female slaves might lawfully be enjoyed by their masters."* Mohammad himself owned many slaves, some of whom he captured in wars of conquest and some he purchased. The names of forty slaves owned by Mohammad are recorded by Muslim chroniclers. Islamic law (Sharia) contains elaborate regulations for slavery. A slave had no right to be heard in court (testimony was forbidden by slaves), slaves had no right to property, could marry only with the permission of the owner, and were considered to be chattel, that is the movable property, of the slave owner. Muslim slave owners were specifically entitled by Sharia law to sexually exploit their slaves, including hiring them out as prostitutes.



One reason why very little has been written about the Arab involvement in slavery is that traditional Islamic culture still condones slavery. The Sharia, the codified Islamic law which is based upon the teachings and example of Mohammad, contains explicit regulations for slavery. One of the primary principles of Islam is following the example of Mohammad. Whatever Mohammad did, we must do, what he forbade, we must forbid, what he did not forbid, we may not forbid. As Mohammad himself traded in slaves and owned slaves, accumulating multiple wives, even marrying a six year old, and having concubines - slavery and the sexual exploitation of women is deeply ingrained in Islamic tradition. Muslim nations had

engaged in the slave trade for over 600 years before Europe became involved in the Trans-Atlantic slave trade.

### Slavery Today

Almost 200 years after the British outlawed the slave trade in 1807, slave raids and the sale of slaves in Muslim markets continues in countries like Sudan. The slave trade remained legal in Saudi Arabia until 1962, when under international pressure it was finally abolished. However, there are persistent, credible reports, that slavery persists in Saudi Arabia, and even that slaves from Sudan are ending up in Saudi Arabia.

### The Law of Liberty

Although the Old Testament provided for slavery for criminals and insolvent debtors, kidnapping and enslaving law-abiding people incurred the death penalty. **“Anyone who kidnaps another and either sells him or still has him when he is caught must be put to death.”** Exodus 21:16

The New Testament expressly forbids both the slave trade and slavery itself. *...the Law is made not for the righteous but for Law breakers.. for those who kill their fathers or mothers, for murderers, for adulterers and perverts, for slave traders and liars and perjurers...*” 1 Timothy 1:9-10

**“There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free...for you are all one in Christ Jesus.”** Galatians 3:28

**“From one man He made every nation of men...”** Acts 17:26

**“Love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength ...love your neighbour as yourself.”** Mark 12:30-31

**“Then you will know the truth and the truth will set you free.”** John 8:32

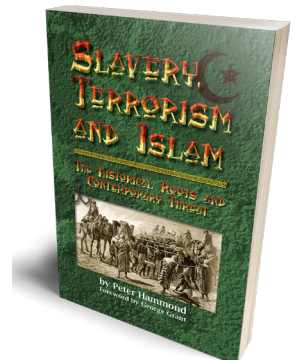
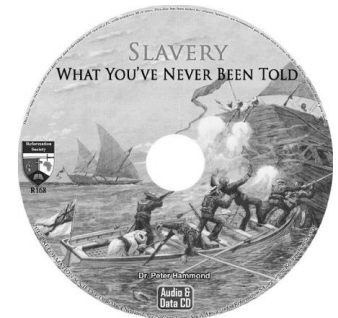
**“...where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom.”** 2 Cor. 3:17

**“...proclaim liberty throughout the land...”** Leviticus 25:10

Dr. Peter Hammond

### Bibliography

- A History of Christianity*, by Kenneth Scott Latourette, Harper, 1953
- Christian Slaves, Muslim Masters: White Slavery in the Mediterranean; the Barbary Coast and Italy 1500 - 1800*, by Robert Davis, Palgrave MacMillan, 2004
- God's Politician*, by Garth Lean, Helmets and Howard, 1987
- History of Slavery*, by Suzanne Everett, Chartwell, 1997
- Islam's Black Slaves*, by Ronald Segal, Farrar, New York, 2001
- Missionary Travels and Researches in South Africa*, by David Livingstone, London, 1857
- Narrative of an Expedition to the Zambezi*, by David Livingstone, London, 1865
- The Greatest Century of Missions*, by Peter Hammond, CLB, 2002
- The Slave Trade*, by Hugh Thomas, 1997
- Under the influence - How Christianity Transformed Civilization*, by Alvin Schmit Zondervan, 2001



**Frontline Fellowship** P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
 admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 18

**The FRENCH REVOLUTION****A Time of Turmoil**

The French Revolution was one of the most influential events of modern history. The ten-year period from 1789 to 1799 when France went from a Monarchy to a Republic, to a Reign of Terror, to Dictatorship was one of the most tumultuous times in European history.

**Myth and Reality**

Much myth and romantic legend has been written on what some politicians would like the French Revolution to have been, but the reality was that the French Revolution was a monstrous horror. In the name of "*liberty, equality, fraternity or death!*" over 40,000 people lost their heads to the guillotine, 300,000 people were publically executed by firing squads, drownings and other methods of mass murder and ultimately many millions died in the 25 years of war and upheavals that resulted.

**The Prototype Revolution**

The French Revolution has been the inspiration and model for all socialist and communist revolutions in modern history.

**Deliberate Design**

Lord Acton in his Lectures on the French Revolution observed: "*The appalling thing in the French Revolution is not the tumult, but the design. Through all the fire and smoke we perceive the evidence of calculating organisation. The managers remain studiously concealed and masked; but there is no doubt about their presence from the first.*"

**Tools of Revolution**

The tools of the French Revolution were: dis-information, propaganda, the subversion of language, malice, envy, hatred, jealousy, mass murder and foreign military adventurism as a diversion to distract the masses from the failure of government. These tools have been implemented by more modern revolutionaries: Vladimir Lenin, Trotsky, Joseph Stalin, Mao Tse Tung, Fidel Castro, Che Guevare, Patrice Lumumba, Nicolai Ceausescu, Pol Pot, Ho Chi Minh and Robert Mugabe.

**Revolutionary Ideas**

The power mad and disenchanted have continued to sing the praises of the French Revolution, and to attempt to replicate its ideals in revolutions as far afield as Russia, China, Cuba, North Korea, Vietnam, Laos, Cambodia, Ethiopia, Mozambique, Angola, the Congo and Zimbabwe. Demonic forces and the Enlightenment ideas of humanist philosophers such as Jean-Jacques Rousseau and Voltaire prepared the ground for revolution.

### **Disenchantment and Degeneration**

Historian Otto Scott observed: *"French intellectuals, middle and upper classes had grown ashamed of their country, history and institutions. Such a phenomenon had never before arisen in any nation or race throughout the long history of mankind. ...a great loosening began; the country slowly came apart... for the first time since the decadent days of Rome, pornography emerged from its caves and circulated openly in a civilised nation. The Catholic Church in France was intellectually gutted; the priests lost their faith along with the congregations. Strange cults appeared; sex rituals, black magic, satanism. Perversion became not only acceptable, but fashionable. Homosexuals held public balls to which heterosexuals were invited and the police guarded their carriages... the air grew thick with plans to restructure and reconstruct all traditional French society and institutions."* (Robespierre - Inside the French Revolution, the Reformer Library, New York, 1974.)

### **The Role of the News Media**

*"The heirs of the Enlightenment of the late 18th century... launched the first Revolution in all history against the ideas of Christianity, and Christianity's God. ...the press... was spearhead, font, and fuel for these discussions... the journals were mixtures of politics and smut. They admired agitators extravagantly and never discussed the Church without mention of scandal, nor the government without criticism. They relied heavily on tales of sin in high places and high handed outrages of the court; no name, however highly placed and illustrious, escaped. ...through its journals and pamphlets ...it could distort, colour, plead, argue, lie, report, and misreport the information upon which the balance of the realm depended."* (Otto Scott, [Robespierre](#))

### **The Debt Crisis**

The French involvement in the American War of Independence against Great Britain created an enormous debt for France. This debt added to the financial crises which had started with France's involvement in the earlier ruinous Seven Years War against Great Britain and Prussia. The colossal debt added to the financial crises which propelled the French state into bankruptcy.

### **Side-lined from Recovery**

King Louis XVI began his reign wisely. He dismissed the large number of corrupt and incompetent ministers inherited from the court of his father, Louis XV and he appointed an excellent economist, Anne Robert Jacques Turgot as Controller General. Turgot proposed drastic solutions to France's crises: the cancellation of tax privileges for the nobles, the abolition of industrial monopolies, removal of restrictions on free enterprise, and other bold, practical measures. However, the nobles pressured Louis XVI to dismiss Turgot.

### **Stop Gap Measures to Stave off Economic Collapse**

The young banker Jacques Necker was then given the task of managing the unmanageable bankrupt economy. He bravely tried some short-term measures to stave off the inevitable economic collapse. But when he attempted to move towards adopting Turgot's free market strategies, the privileged nobles and wealthy middle-class forced the king to dismiss him too. This was in 1781. Louis entrusted one hapless man after another with the financial crises, but all to no avail. France's international credit rating was plummeting and the country was no longer able to secure loans.

### **Bankruptcy**

By mid-1788, the government had become paralysed and no longer able to avoid admitting bankruptcy. The king was forced to re-instate Necker and call for a meeting of the Estates-General to be convened in May 1789.

### **The Estates General**

The Estates General consisted of three houses, the first Estate was the Clergy, the second Estate was the Nobles and the third Estate were merchants and the common people. Although the third house had twice as many people as the other houses, each house was understood historically to have only one vote. Louis' government failed to specify how the three houses of the Estates-General were to function, nor did he provide them with any Agenda or Constitution.

### **The National Assembly**

The commoners in the third house boldly organised themselves as a self-contained National Assembly. The nobles were outraged and convinced Louis XVI to send troops to blockade the hall where the Assembly planned to meet. The third Estate then met on a nearby tennis court and vowed to continue in session until they could complete a new Constitution for the nation. This was outright rebellion against the authority of the king. Yet, on 27 June 1789, Louis ordered the other two estates to join the commoners in a new combined Assembly.



### The Liberals

The National Assembly spent most of its time debating the latest philosophical and political theories. The Marquis de Lafayette, who had achieved fame through his involvement in the American war of Independence, espoused the cause of freedom and rallied the liberal wing of nobles around him. The Count of Mirabeau dominated the Assembly through his eloquent campaign for a constitutional monarchy.

### The Fanatics

The most fanatical extremists gravitated to Maximilien Robespierre who was a strong devotee of the writings of radical philosophers Jean-Jacques Rousseau and Voltaire. Rousseau wrote that: *"It is necessary to have a cohesive force to organise and coordinate the movements of (societies), members."* Rousseau advocated constant agitation for *"equality"* in order to maintain an atmosphere of fear where individual differences will not be tolerated. Inspired by the defiance of the Assembly and stirred up by revolutionary pamphlets and speeches, mobs began to roam the streets of Paris attacking and murdering royal officials.

### Coordinated Chaos

France's financial house of cards collapsed. Capital fled the country and economic depression resulted. A series of events combined to create food shortages and hunger. Agitators panned out across the countryside to destroy the grain stores and terrorise the inhabitants. Hired mobs staged *"spontaneous"* riots in Paris. The powers of government then collapsed. Everything fell apart with astonishing co-ordination.

### Reaction

In reaction, some of the nobles persuaded the king to seek to reassert royal authority. Soldiers were ordered into the streets of Paris as a show of strength. The appearance of the soldiers inspired mobs to seize whatever weapons they could find and to storm the old fortress of the Bastille.

### Revolution

The French Revolution is officially dated from this point: 14 July 1789. The Bastille had become a symbol of hated tyranny and much legend has grown out of this event. As it so happens, there were no political prisoners at the Bastille at that time, and despite the fact that the Lieutenant Governor of the Bastille, M. De Launay, was guaranteed safe conduct and surrendered the fortress under a white flag of truce, the mob massacred his soldiers, and the governor, cutting off their heads and carrying them on spikes throughout the streets. As body parts of the defenders of the Bastille were paraded through the streets, a mere seven prisoners were found in the Bastille. When the news reached the palace of Versailles, King Louis was astonished: *"This is revolt!"* He said. The Duc de la Rochefoucauld-Liancourt responded: *"No, Sire, it is a Revolution!"*

### Appeasement

The next day King Louis arrived, simply dressed and with no bodyguards or attendants, and spoke at the National Assembly. He had ordered the troops to leave Paris, so that the people would have no reason to fear their king. Louis assured them that he had confidence in the Assembly. The deputies rose to their feet cheering with great fervour. 88 of the deputies gathered at the Paris City Hall and took turns speaking to the enormous crowd from the balcony. The famous 32-year-old Lafayette was elected General of the National Guard.

### Deterioration

While many seemed optimistic for the future, Marie Antoinette was filled with foreboding and burned her private papers. Nobles fled the court and the country, with many settling across the border. On the 17 July the king travelled to Paris to identify with the revolutionary mob. In October a mob marched to Versailles demanding that the king transfer his residence to Paris. On 6 October, the royal family were escorted by the rioters to Paris where they could be under the control of the revolutionaries.





### Manipulation of the Masses

Otto Scott observed that: "*Paris, like the nation, was divided into the politically active and the passive, between the many confused, disorganised and abstracted and the highly concentrated organised and intent few.*" (Robespierre).

### Radicalisation

Two clubs came to dominate the Assembly at this time: The Cordeliers were led by Georges Jacques Danton and Jean Paul Marat. The Jacobins were skilfully manipulated by Robespierre.

### The Origin of the Left Wing

It was in the French Revolution that the terms "*left wing*" and "*right wing*" were first coined. Those on the left were the Radicals, who proudly adopted the designation as a symbol of their Revolutionary defiance of Christian tradition which always represented those on the right hand of God as saved, and those on the left as damned. (James Billington, *Fire in the Minds of Men: Origin of the Revolutionary Faith.*)

### The Hijacking of the Church

On 4 August 1789, the Nobles and Clergy renounced their privileges in the name of revolutionary equality. On 2 November 1789, the Assembly voted to confiscate church property and issue new paper money, called *Assignats*. This sparked off rampant inflation. In July 1790 the Assembly nationalised the Roman Catholic Church by enacting the *Civil Constitution of the Clergy*. The Assembly undertook to pay the salaries of the priests from the National Treasury and to create a French church under the control of the government. Pope Pius VI excommunicated all clergymen who took the new oath demanded by the Assembly. Most of the clergy refused to take the oath and were evicted from their pulpits and parishes. France was divided into 83 Departments (counties).

### Declaration of the Rights of Man

The National Assembly produced the *Declaration of the Rights of Man and of Citizens*. Although this was patterned after the English Bill of Rights of 1689 and the American Bill of Rights which had been appended to the United States Constitution, the French Declaration embodied mostly humanistic ideas of the Enlightenment. While attempting to adopt many of the forms of the Biblically orientated Magna Carta and the English Bill of Rights, the French Declaration of the Rights of Man failed to recognise the Creator and ignored the Biblical foundations for true freedom. A new Constitution was completed in 1791, with a unicameral legislature elected by "*active citizens*". Before Mirabeau died, in April 1791, he predicted that all their well-deliberated efforts at Reform would collapse and be washed away in a bloodbath.

### Abolishing the Monarchy

Louis XVI attempted to flee with his family from France on the night of 20 June 1791. When radicals discovered them, they blocked their path and escorted the royal family back to Paris. Danton and Robespierre seized upon this event as an opportunity to proclaim that France was a Republic. As the new Legislative Assembly met, 1 October 1791, the Girondists proposed replacing the just-adopted Constitution and creating a Republic.



## War

Deeply concerned for the fate of the royal family, Austria, ruled by Leopold II, the brother of Mary Antoinette, prepared to invade France. The Assembly declared war on Austria in 1792. The French were soon defeated by the Austrians and the Prussians.

## Massacre

The mob stormed the king's residence and massacred the royal Swiss guards. The Assembly voted to depose the king and write a new constitution. On 10 August 1792 the municipal government was overthrown and Danton became the self-appointed national dictator. The entire male population was drafted for military service and weapons production entered high gear. In September 1792, terrorist mobs swarmed through the prisons and massacred thousands of prisoners including many nobles who had been arrested for no other reason than that they were nobility.



## Killing the King

A new National Convention was called on 21 September 1792 to write a new constitution. In December, the Convention summoned the deposed King, Louis Capet as he was now called. On 21 January 1793 King Louis XVI was beheaded on the guillotine.

## Coalition Against Revolution

All of Europe was horrified and a coalition was formed against France. Austria, England, Holland, Prussia, Spain and Piedmont prepared to restore order to France and prevent the exporting of revolution to their own regions.

## The Reign of Terror

The Jacobins mobilised the mob to invade the Convention and arrest the 31 leading Girondists. This launched the Reign of Terror, which officially began 2 June 1793. Robespierre established the Committee of Public Safety. A policy of mass public terror was unleashed with Revolutionary Tribunals, in which all "*enemies of the Revolution*" were summarily tried. Mere accusations were tantamount to verdicts of guilt. The trials were abrupt with no real opportunity granted to the accused to prepare or present any defence. The accused were quickly convicted and carted off to the guillotine.

## Killing of the Queen

The Queen, 38-year-old Mary Antoinette, was dragged through the mockery of a trial and guillotined on 16 October. Her son, later recognised as Louis XVII, died as a result of inhuman treatment by his revolutionary jailers.

## Heads Roll

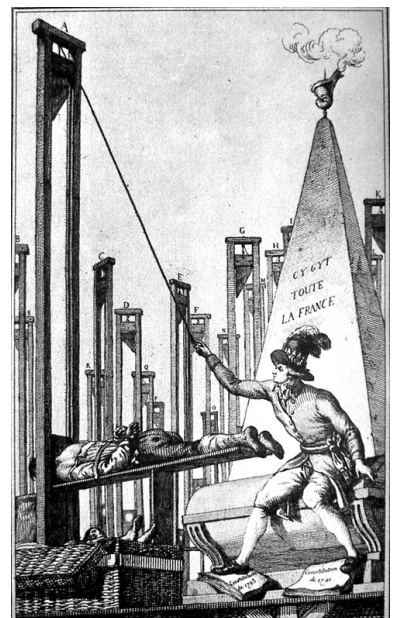
Twenty-one Girondist leaders, including Madam Roland, were also beheaded shortly after the Queen. The Duke of Orleans who had joined the Jacobins and taken the name of *citizen Egaliter*, even voting for the death of his cousin the King, was also executed at this time.

## Big Bang Social Science

Romantic occultism taught a big bang theory of social science. If one could blow up, or burn down, enough buildings, kill enough people and destroy enough things, you could produce *Utopia!*

## Destruction

The Reign of Terror spread throughout France. When one city sought to resist, it was destroyed. The revolutionaries set up a pillar outside Lyons inscribed: "*Lyons waged war with Liberty. Lyons is no more.*" Toulon was subjugated under the



leadership of a young artillery officer from Corsica, Napoleon Bonaparte.

### War Against God

The Committee of Public Safety launched a vicious atheistic war against Christianity. They invented a new religion which they called the Cult of Reason. At a festival at the Notre Dame Cathedral in Paris an actress was enthroned as the *"goddess of the French people."* France was renamed *"The Republic of Virtue"*. Ancient Rome was lifted up as its model. The press and theatres were turned into instruments for state propaganda. Fashions changed to immoral loose Roman robes. Over 2,000 churches were renamed Temples of Reason and hijacked for the promotion of this cult.

### A Secular Religion

Historian Arnold Toynbee wrote: *"In the Revolution a sinister ancient religion suddenly re-erupted with elemental violence... the fanatical worship of collective human power. The Terror was only the first of the mass-crimes that have been committed... in this evil religions name."* (John Wilson, The gods of Revolution.)

### Meltdown

The revolutionaries began to turn on one another. Danton was executed 5 April 1794. On 7 May, Robespierre sought to impose a new religion on France, declaring a new calendar to replace the Christian calendar. 21 September 1792, the day the Monarchy had ended, was declared the First day of year one of their revolutionary calendar. Robespierre appointed himself as high priest of the Supreme Being in this new cult.

### Reaping What They Had Sown

On 27 July 1794, Robespierre and 20 other of his henchmen were seized and executed by the survivors of the Convention. More than 40,000 victims had been murdered on the guillotine under the Reign of Terror. Over two-thirds of those victims had been peasants, artisans and workers. As Madam Roland was being ushered up to the platform to be guillotined she faced the statue of the goddess Liberty and cried out: *"O Liberty, Liberty! What crimes are committed in thy name!"*

### Unleashing Forces of Destruction

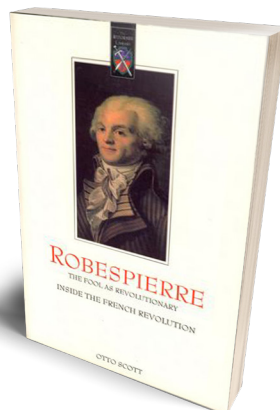
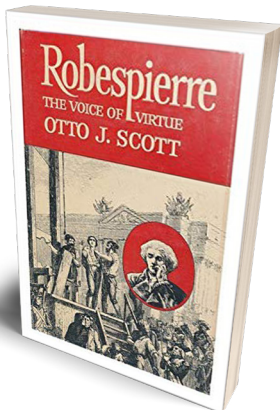
The end of the reign of terror was not the end of the French Revolution. It would be followed by the Directory and by the Dictatorship eventually culminating in Napoleon's Empire which embroiled all of Europe in ruinous war. Even after the death of Robespierre, the Revolution continued to talk about liberty and equality, to fight against the Christian Faith, and to inspire more communes, voices of virtue and revolutionaries like Vladimir Lenin, Joseph Stalin, Fidel Castro, Mao Tse Tung and Robert Mugabe.

### Revolutionary Tyranny

The French Revolution was the prototype, which was followed by the Russian Revolution, the Chinese Revolution, the Cuban Revolution, the Cambodian Revolution, the Vietnamese Revolution, the Ethiopian Revolution, the Mozambiquan Revolution, the Angolan Revolution, the Zimbabwe Revolution and many others. In every case they proved that yesterday's revolutionaries become tomorrow's tyrants and dictators.

***"While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption."*** 2 Peter 2:19

Dr. Peter Hammond



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
 admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 19

## The BATTLE of WATERLOO

**Watershed**

18 June marks the anniversary of the decisive Battle of Waterloo. The British and German victory over the French at the Battle of Waterloo decisively ended the French Revolutionary and Napoleonic wars which had convulsed Europe for almost 25 years. It ended the political and military career of Napoleon Bonaparte and ushered in almost a century of general peace throughout most of Europe. Waterloo was a victory of Christianity against Humanism. It was a great victory for God's Covenant Nations. It was a victory for Protestant Britain and Germany against Catholic France. It marked the beginning of the Greatest Century of Missions.

**Decisive**

Waterloo was the crowning triumph of the career of Arthur Wellesley, the First Duke of Wellington. The Duke of Wellington remarked that the battle had been "*a damned serious business*" and "*the nearest run thing you ever saw in your life.*" On 18 July 1815, the Duke of Wellington, leading an Anglo-Dutch-German force fought to a standstill a confident and enthusiastic army led by Napoleon whose military performance had dazzled Europe. Napoleon Bonaparte was renowned as the greatest soldier of his age. Yet, he was decisively stopped and outmanoeuvred by the Iron Duke and his ally Field Marshall Gebhard Blücher, whose timely arrival at the close of the day sealed the victory and sent Napoleon and his forces fleeing for Paris.

**Revolutionary Threat**

The Battle of Waterloo was an epoch closing event and one of the great watersheds of history. The disastrous Russian campaign of 1812, had signalled the decline of Napoleon and his Revolutionary French forces. Marshall Blücher's victory over Napoleon at the Battle of Leipzig, 1813, led to Napoleon Bonaparte's abdication and exile to the Island of Elba. However, he escaped back to France, February 1815 and with whirlwind energy reassembled his army. Paris workshops produced 1,200 uniforms and 12,000 cartridges a day. By June, 124,000 French soldiers were concentrated near the border of Netherlands, which at that time included Belgium.

**Outnumbered**

Few Allied armies could be mobilised in time to resist Napoleon's inevitable offensive. The Duke of Wellington arrived in Brussels, 4 April, to discover that his Anglo-Dutch forces consisted of a scant 33,000 men. Wellington exclaimed: "*I have an infamous army, very weak and ill-equipped and a very inexperienced staff.*" Most of Wellington's experienced officers and men had been shipped across the Atlantic to fight the Americans in the War of 1812. German volunteers from Hanover and Brunswick and 6,000 men of the King's German Legion swelled Wellington's heterogeneous force to 68,000. Insufficient to be able to defeat the French forces, Wellington was dependent on the support of the Prussian (German) forces of Marshall Blücher.

**Invasion**

On 14 June, Napoleon's Order of the Day came to invade the Netherlands. "*The moment has come to conquer or to perish,*" he declared. In brilliant sunshine, the Emperor's forces seized the frontier town of Charleroi, where he was supported by many French speaking Belgians, who were revolutionary sympathisers and quick to switch sides. Napoleon's plan was to march on to Brussels, severing the communication lines between Wellington's Anglo-Dutch-German forces and Blücher's Prussian army, defeating them separately.

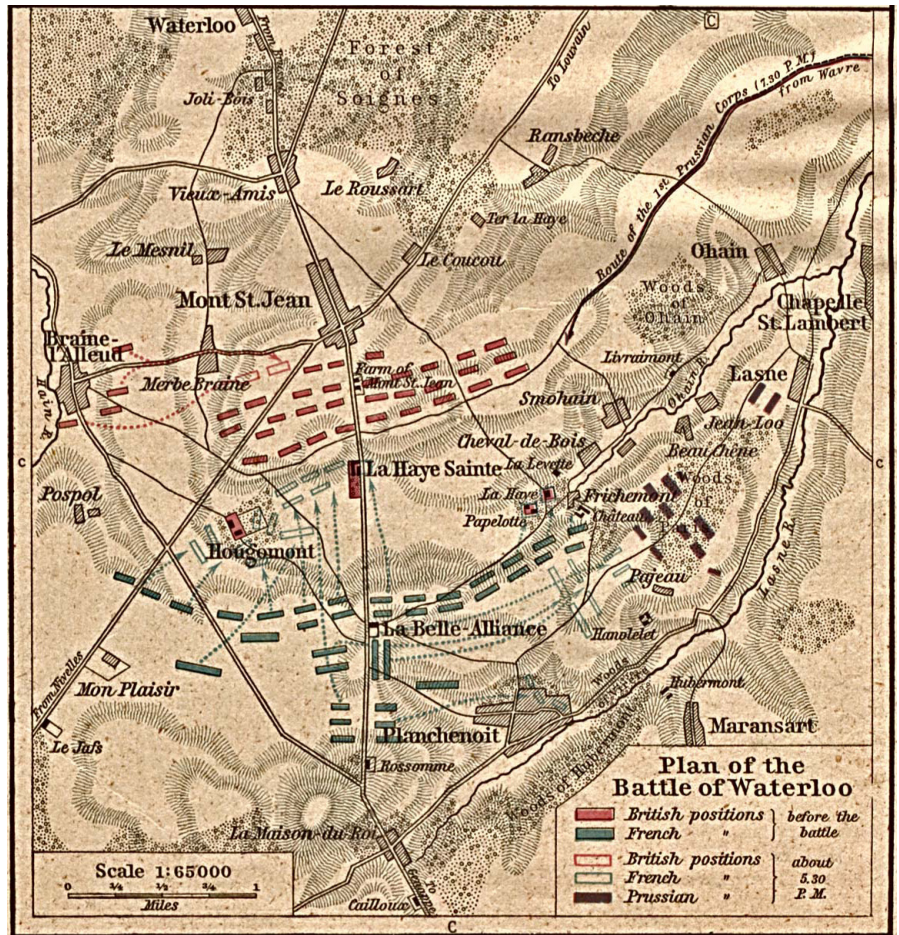


**Retreat**

Napoleon's surprise offensive enjoyed early success, as he forced Wellington's forces at Quatre Bras, 32km South of Brussels, to withdraw before the overwhelming French attack. Eight kilometres away the Prussian army at Ligny was also forced to retreat under furious artillery fire and an overwhelming concentration of French forces.

**Making a Stand**

On the afternoon of 17 June, the Duke of Wellington halted on a ridge that crossed the road to Brussels. Flanked by forests on both sides, it was a choke point through which Napoleon's forces would be funnelled. Napoleon had carefully selected the ground as an ideal defensive position in August the previous year. (At the time he had recommended the construction of a number of fortresses, which had not yet been built.) Wellington had chosen his battlefield well. His men occupied and fortified the Chateau of Hougoumont and the farm house of La Haie Sainte. The East-West ridge which became the central point of Wellington's defensive position, provided cover for his cavalry and troops on its Northern reverse slope.



**Downpour**

Providentially, intensive rain had saturated the soil, which forced Napoleon to delay his offensive on Sunday, 18 June, until noon, to enable the soil to dry out sufficiently. As it was, the mud dissipated much of the effect of his artillery and slowed down the French forces as their boots and hooves churned up the clay soil into a morass.

**Teamwork**

While Wellington had made the best use of his chosen ground, he knew that his forces were insufficient to resist an all-out attack by all the French forces available to Napoleon. It was on the basis of an assurance from Marshall Blücher that he would march to their relief, that Wellington made his courageous stand just South of Mont Saint Jean, close to the village of Waterloo.



**Volunteer Veterans**

At the Battle of Waterloo, the French had 69,000 including 48,000 infantry, 14,000 cavalry, 7,000 artillery with 260 guns. Most of Napoleon's men were veterans of at least one campaign and were almost all volunteers.

**Inexperienced Conscripts**

Wellington had 50,000 infantry, 11,000 cavalry and 150 guns. Of these 25,000 were British, 6,000 from the King's German Legion, 17,000 Dutch and Belgian troops, 11,000 from Hanover, 6,000 from Brunswick and 3,000 from Nassau. Many of the troops of the Coalition Forces were inexperienced. (Most of the experienced troops who had served with Wellington before had been sent to North America.) 48,000 Prussians under Marshall Blücher arrived at the climax of the battle.



### **Hougoumont**

Hours later than Napoleon had intended, the battle began at 11:30am on Sunday, 18 June. Most of Wellington's forces were sheltered from the artillery fire by being stationed on the reverse slope of the ridge. The initial attack by Napoleon was against the farm house of Hougoumont, guarding Wellington's right flank. Resolutely defended by the British Foot Guards and Hanovarian and Nassau soldiers, Hougoumont resisted all assaults by Napoleon's three main infantry corps who assailed it mercilessly throughout the day.

### **Mass Assault Repulsed**

Having failed to divert any of Wellington's reserves into this diversionary flank attack, Napoleon sent in D'Erlon's infantry corps, supported by cavalry and the concentrated fire of over 260 cannon of the French artillery against Wellington's left centre. Two brigades of British heavy cavalry scattered the massed columns and sent them fleeing back down the slope.

### **Scotland Forever**

One of the most heroic actions of a day filled with heroism was the charge of the Scots Greys as part of the Heavy Brigade. As they thundered down the slope on their magnificent grey chargers, yelling "*Scotland Forever!*" and slashing at their enemy left and right, they seized the Eagle banner of the French 45<sup>th</sup> Regiment, the so-called *Invincibles* and scattered the massed French centre column attack. However, in their euphoria, the Scots Greys advanced too far and many were lost to the French counter attack with the Lancers.

### **Squares Defeat Cavalry**

As Wellington ordered his infantry in the centre right to move to the reverse slope of the Northern ridge at 16h00, Marshall Ney ordered a cavalry assault in hope of chasing this apparent retreat into a rout. From the French perspective this was a disastrous move. Wellington had ordered a controlled and limited withdrawal and his infantry were able to form squares in good time to fight off every cavalry charge.

### **La Haie Sainte**

Marshall Ney finally succeeded in capturing the farm house of La Haie Sainte only because the King's German Legion garrison had run out of ammunition. It was at this critical moment that the Prussian cavalry charged at Plancenoit and forced the redeployment of most of the Imperial Guard to confront the Prussian threat to their right flank.

### **Grouchy Fails to Defeat the Prussians**

The 33,000 men Napoleon had detached under Marshall Grouchy to pursue the Prussians to ensure that they did not link up with Wellington's forces, failed in their mission. Despite Marshall Blücher having been injured by his horse falling on him during a cavalry charge at Ligny, the 73-year old veteran had succeeded in reorganising his defeated and scattered men into a cohesive fighting force that out-marched Grouchy's pursuing French forces.





### Triumph

In an extraordinary feat, Blücher led his army on a torturous forced march, along muddy roads, arriving at the Battle of Waterloo in time to save the day and crown Wellington's forces steadfast resistance with a most decisive victory. Together they crushed the French and relentlessly pursued them all the way to Paris. The Prussians nearly captured Napoleon himself.



### The Ridge

At 19:30 Napoleon launched the final attack against Wellington's line on the ridge in what was to be the climactic point of the battle. Wellington had bolstered his centre by bringing in the Dutch and Belgian divisions. Nine battalions of the Imperial Guard attacked Wellington's centre, who were dangerously short of ammunition. The British Foot Guards of Maitland's Brigade faced the Imperial Guard and Wellington's voice rang out: *"Now, Maitland! Now is your time!"* The order rang out: *"Up Guards! Make ready! Fire!"* The Foot Guards gave a withering fire to the French formations who were unable to deploy into line.

### They Will Not Stand

Wellington galloped to Sir John Colborne of the 52<sup>nd</sup>: *"Go on, Colborne! Go on! They won't stand. Don't give them a chance to rally!"* Wellington had gauged the mood of the French army precisely. At this point Colonel Colborne, commanding the 52 Light Infantry Battalion took his men out of the line in an audacious move wheeling them to their right, so they ended up parallel to the left flank of the French formation and delivered a final devastating blow, forcing the French to crumble and retreat. As the 52<sup>nd</sup> charged with bayonets, Napoleon's last army disintegrated in flight.

### Counter Attack

As the Prussian forces emerged from the woods, to roll up the French right flank, Wellington ordered his men off the ridge into a general advance, which cleared the battlefield of all French units. The battle had been hanging in the balance before the arrival of Blücher's Prussian army. The German assault was decisive in crushing Napoleon's reserves and relentlessly pursuing the scattered French forces all the way to Paris, which they entered on 7 July.

### Retreat

The French retreat turned into rout as coalition cavalry pursued them until 23:00. Napoleon's elite Young Guard failed to stem the Prussian advance and were annihilated. Napoleon's abandoned carriage was captured, still containing diamonds left behind in the rush to escape. These diamonds became part of King Frederick Wilhelm of Prussia's crown jewels. Over 2,000 French prisoners, including several generals and 78 artillery pieces were captured by the Germans before the end of that day, 18 June 1815. French casualties for the Battle of Waterloo totalled 41,000. Allied casualties, 24,000. The defeat of Waterloo ended Napoleon's rule as Emperor of the French and marked the end of his 100 days return from exile.



### Victory

Around 22:00, the Duke of Wellington and Marshall Blücher met at La Belle Alliance, the farm house that had formed Napoleon's headquarters during the battle. Marshall Blücher and the Duke of Wellington saluted each other and warmly shook hands, congratulating one another on their stunning victory.



### Abdication and Capture

Napoleon's political support withered away after the defeat at Waterloo and, on 24 June 1815, Napoleon announced his second abdication. Paris surrendered on 4 July 1815. Napoleon's attempt to escape to North America was thwarted by the Royal Navy blockade and he was forced to surrender to Captain Frederick Maitland of HMS Bellerophon on 15 July. The Treaty of Paris was signed 20 November 1815 and Louis XVIII was restored to the throne of France.



### Surrender

#### Napoleon in his letter of surrender to the Prince Regent of England,

**wrote:** *"Royal Highness – exposed to the factions which divide my country and to the enmity to the great powers of Europe, I have terminated my political career; and come like Themistocles to throw myself upon the hospitality of the British people. I claim from your Royal Highness the protection of the laws and throw myself upon the most powerful, the most constant and the most generous, of my enemies."*

### Lions Mound

Today one can visit the Battlefield of Waterloo. 18km South of Brussels, it is dominated by the large monument, the Lion's Mound. The Lion's mound is a large conical artificial hill built as a symbol of the Allied victory over the French. The Mound is 43 metres high with a circumference of 520 metres and a volume of 390,000 m<sup>3</sup>. Victor Hugo mentions in his novel, *Les Miserables*, that on visiting that site two years after the completion of the Mound, the Duke of Wellington is said to have remarked: *"They have altered my field of battle!"* As much of the soil used to construct the artificial hill was taken from other parts of the battlefield, the topography has been seriously altered. However the Mound does offer a splendid view of the battlefield to those who ascend the 226 steps leading to the Lion statue and observation area. The Lion statue weighs 28 tonnes and is 4.5 metres in length. The Lion is the heraldic focus of the coat of arms of the Monarch of the Netherlands. The Mound was completed in 1826.

### Grenadier Guards

Maitland's First Foot Guards, having defeated the Grenadiers, were awarded the title of Grenadier Guards and adopted bearskins in the style of the French Grenadiers that they had defeated.

### Household Cavalry

Britain's Household Cavalry likewise adopted the Cuirass armour of the French cavalry that they had defeated at Waterloo.

### Lancers

The effectiveness of the French Lancers led to the widespread adoption of their weapon throughout Europe. The British converted their first light cavalry regiment to lances in 1816.



### A Sepulchre for France

Victor Hugo in *Les Miserables*, wrote that: *"At the battlefield of Waterloo there is no French tomb. The whole of that plain is a sepulchre for France."*

### A Legacy of Destruction

Although Napoleon is highly respected as a military commander, at least 6 million Europeans died in the 17 years of war that Napoleon had waged against the rest of Europe. When he went into exile, France was bankrupt and her overseas colonies were lost. The Napoleonic Wars set back Europe's economic life for at least a generation.



## Duke of Wellington

Field Marshall Arthur Wellesley, the First Duke of Wellington (1769-1852), was a Protestant from Ireland who served as an Aide-De-Camp to two successive Lord Lieutenants of Ireland. He was also elected as a Member of Parliament in the Irish House of Commons. A Colonel by 1796, Wellesley saw action in the Netherlands and in India, served as Governor of Seringapatam and Mysore in 1799. As a Major General, he won a decisive victory at the Battle of Assaye in 1803. Wellesley rose to prominence as a General during the Peninsula campaign in Spain and Portugal during the Napoleonic Wars and was promoted to Field Marshall after his victory over the French at the Battle of Vitoria in 1813. Following Napoleon's exile in 1814, Wellesley served as British Ambassador to France and was granted a Dukedom. During the 100 Days War in 1815, he crowned his military career with the decisive defeat of Napoleon and the French forces at the Battle of Waterloo. The Duke of Wellington participated in 60 battles during his military career.

## Courageous and Decisive

The Duke of Wellington's constant appearance at points of crisis did much for the morale of the troops. He hazarded himself as much as the most frontline soldier. The heavy casualties amongst his staff bear solemn testimony to the risks he ran on that day and at other battles he fought. Wellington showed the rare ability to always be at the right place at the right time. It was his personal intervention which shored up the damaged and threatened centre after the fall of La Haie Sainte. It was his precise timing and order which initiated the destruction of the Imperial Guard at the climactic point of the battle.

## Honoured Leader

Wellington adapted defensive styles of warfare where he minimised his own losses while succeeding in defeating numerically superior forces. Many of his tactics and battle plans are still studied in military academies around the world. He was twice elected Prime Minister of Great Britain. He continued as one of the leading figures in the House of the Lords and remained Commander in Chief of the British Army until his death.

## Compassionate Leader

Wellington was known to always rise early. He scorned creature comforts and even after returning to civilian life, slept in a camp bed. He was described as a practical man who spoke concisely. It was rare that he expressed emotion. His physician reported that he broke down in tears the night after the Battle of Waterloo, unwilling to be congratulated for his victory, because of the high cost of the battle in terms of the loss of lives of his own forces. Wellington wept when he read the casualty returns: *"I do not know what it is to lose a battle, but certainly nothing can be more painful than to gain one with the loss of so many of one's friends."*

## Truth and Valour

Wellington received a state funeral, 18 November 1852 and buried in St. Pauls Cathedral next to Lord Nelson. The bronze memorial sculptured for Wellington's memorial features *Truth tearing the tongue out of falsehood* and *Valour trampling cowardice underfoot*.

## Dramatic Reversal of Fortunes

The Battle of Waterloo is one of the most famous battles in history. Waterloo has entered the dictionary as *"a decisive or crushing defeat."* The name itself conjures the most dramatic and decisive reversal of fortune possible.

*"Now these things became our examples, to the intent that we should not lust after evil things as they also lusted. And do not become idolaters as were some of them... Now all these things happened to them as examples and they were written for our admonition..."*

1 Corinthians 10:6-7,11.

Dr. Peter Hammond



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
 admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 20

**MAKING DISCIPLES of ALL NATIONS**

**If we want the 21<sup>st</sup> century to be the greatest century of missions and revival then we will need to learn from the Christian pioneers whom God used to make the 19<sup>th</sup> century (1801-1900) the greatest century of Christian advance, so far.**

How Christianity became the first truly international religion, in just one century, is an amazing story. What inspired these incredibly effective missionary pioneers, and the successful strategies they used, need to be prayerfully examined if we are to be more effective in world evangelism.

**They Changed the World**

While the 20<sup>th</sup> century can boast greater numbers of missionaries in the field, and greater numbers of converts, the 19<sup>th</sup> century saw far greater depth of impact for the Gospel. Especially when we consider the very limited resources available to these pioneers and the overwhelming difficulties, dangers and obstacles, which they had to overcome, the missionary pioneers of the 19<sup>th</sup> century clearly present the most inspiring examples of Christian courage and perseverance, against all odds.

The incredible adventures of these soul-winners, nation-builders and culture-shapers, make for exhilarating reading. The exploits and achievements of these extraordinary Christian heroes and heroines have been mostly forgotten in the countries where they were sent out from. For this reason, it is perhaps appropriate that a new book celebrating some of the adventures, sacrifices and achievements of these missionary pioneers, comes from Africa. For it is we in Africa who have benefitted so greatly from that 19<sup>th</sup> century missionary movement.

In this time of secularism and skepticism, some may be surprised to hear how much these missionary pioneers are honoured in Africa. Dr. David Livingstone, for example, has two towns in Africa named after him: Livingstone in Zambia and Livingstonia in Malawi. Other towns in Africa, which were named after Europeans such as Stanleyville, Salisbury, Elizabethville and Fort Victoria, have had their names changed. But Livingstone and Livingstonia remain as a tribute to a man who brought faith to the hearts of Africans, and fear to the hearts of the slave traders. Livingstone is known as a liberator in Africa.

Similarly, while the statues of many colonial figures, such as Cecil John Rhodes, have been toppled and removed, statues and monuments to missionary pioneers, such as David Livingstone, retain their prominence and reflect the deep respect which Africans still have for these Christian pioneers.

**Slandering the Saints**

There have, of course been many concerted attempts to discredit the memory of the early missionaries. Karl Marx declared that the first battlefield is the rewriting of history. From the time I was first converted to Christ in 1977, I have heard the most vicious slanders against the 19<sup>th</sup> century missionary movement.

At one of the first missions conferences I ever attended, a Missiology professor from Stellenbosch University declared: *“The missionaries did not believe that black people had souls. They taught that Africans were the firewood of hell!”*



At the time, as a new convert, I did not know very much about anything. But what he said sounded so outrageous and self-contradictory, that I stood up and challenged him. *“Which missionaries taught this?”* I asked him, *“Did David Livingstone or Robert Moffat teach this?”*

The professor looked a little surprised and said: *“No, not them.”*

*“Did C.T. Studd or Mary Slessor believe these things?”* I challenged him again.

He was beginning to look uncomfortable, *“No, no, not them.”*

*“Well, which missionaries believed and taught this?”* I asked. *“Because I don’t understand why anyone would have come to Africa to be a missionary, many of them dying of disease here in the field, if they did not believe that the people in Africa were souls for whom Christ died. Didn’t many of the missionaries die bringing the Gospel to Africa? Why would they have done that?”*

The university professor never answered my question. He drifted off into some anecdotes about some heartless Church members that he knew who had bad relations with people of other races. I wondered what on earth that had to do with the missionaries of the 19<sup>th</sup> century, who had opened Africa up for the Gospel, often at the cost of their lives. Although I didn't know much about God's Law at the time, I had this uncomfortable feeling that what I had just heard was someone bearing false witness against Christians of another era, who were not present to be able to answer the slander. It seemed cowardly to make a football out of our spiritual fathers.

I have always been interested in history and when I was converted to Christ in 1977, I was overwhelmed with a conviction that I was called to missions. Throughout the last 25 years, I've never doubted that call. I have always been something of a bookworm, so I naturally tended to gravitate towards history books. As my knowledge of missionary history increased, I was astounded at the general ignorance in the church concerning our heritage. I was also most disappointed at the tendency of so many speakers at Missions conferences to disparage the missionary pioneers, who had laid the foundations of the Church in Africa. I could not help wondering if these speakers really thought that we would have done a better job, had we been in their positions. With the few resources they had, and facing the overwhelming obstacles and dangers, which those missionaries confronted, would we have even attempted what they achieved? Hindsight is all very well, but pioneers do not have the benefit of the hindsight of anyone, because they are the pathfinders.

### **In the Steps of Livingstone**

As I ventured into the mission fields of Mozambique, Angola and Sudan, my respect for these missionaries only increased. I was reading Livingstone's Travels while retracing much of his steps in the Shiri Valley (Malawi) and Zambezi Valley (Mozambique) in the mid 1980s, as I was doing the primary research for *In The Killing Fields of Mozambique*.

In 1989, when I was captured by communist troops in Mozambique and flown by Russian pilots and Soviet MI-8 Hip helicopters to Tete, I was intrigued to see how Livingstone's description of Tete back in the 1850s could so accurately have been applied to Tete in 1989 as well! The devastation from the Muslim slave traders, which he recorded, in his Zambezi Expedition of 1858-1864, could have also described much of the scorched-earth campaign of the communist Frelimo government and their Soviet allies in the 1980s.

On another occasion, as I was going down some of the worst roads I had ever experienced in the Shesheke area, I remembered some of the trials and tribulations of David Livingstone in that very area. As I have regularly had to remind young volunteers on our mission, who complain about the bad roads, David Livingstone had to walk, where we drive.

He had to walk across an Africa that had no roads, no bridges, no shops and no hospitals. Neither was clean water available. As Livingstone reported after his first missionary journey *"I have drunk water swarming with insects, thick with mud, putrid with rhinoceros urine and buffalo dung."*

Hacking his way through dense rain forests, walking for days in pouring rain, totally drenched, with his equipment either rusting or rotting, Livingstone persevered across the continent. Hostile tribes demanded exorbitant payment for crossing their territory. His life was often in danger from Muslim slave raiders. He was mauled by a lion, charged by rhino and laid low with fever on over 60 occasions. The afflictions Livingstone was called to endure while opening up Africa for the Gospel, and opposing the slave trade, tested the limits of human endurance. Leeches, maggots, pusti flies, cholera, pneumonia, sunburn, huge sores, tropical ulcers and malaria plagued him.

Yet, his indomitable spirit rose as he set his heart to accomplish goals, which seemed humanly impossible. He persevered and as a result of his sacrificial labours the slave trade in Central and Eastern Africa was exposed and eradicated. Livingstone's steadfast example was used by the Lord to inspire many hundreds of men and women to devote their lives to African missions. Mary Slessor, for example, went to Calabar (present day Nigeria) and Dr. Kenneth Fraser was inspired to go to Moruland in Southern Sudan.

In 1989 Peter Hammond and a Frontline team were captured by communist troops in Northern Mozambique. Soviet MI-8 helicopters flew them to prison

### **Marxist Myths**

Modern detractors of the 19<sup>th</sup> century missionary movement like to brush aside the historical realities, which the missionaries had to confront and prefer to paint Africa before the influence of the Gospel as idyllic and Utopian.

Kenneth Kaunda, the one time dictator of Zambia, wrote in his book *"A Humanist in Africa"* that the people in Africa knew nothing about suffering until the missionaries arrived! According to people like Kaunda, all Africans



lived in peace, harmony, tranquillity and prosperity before the missionaries arrived with the Gospel. One might expect such ahistorical ramblings from committed Marxists who hate the Gospel, but incredibly all too many Christians, because of their ignorance of history, repeat these allegations, even in Christian publications.

### **The Reality of Heathenism**

Mary Slessor was horrified when she arrived in Calabar to discover that *“a woman who gave birth to twins was regarded with horror. The belief was that the father of one of the infants was an evil spirit, and that the mother had been guilty of a great sin to bear twins. At least one of the children was believed to be a monster, and so twins were seized, their backs were broken, they were crushed into a calabash or water pot and taken out, not by the doorway, but by a hole broken in the back wall which was at once built up again, and thrown into the bush, where they were left to be eaten by insects and wild beasts!”*

Mary found Calabar in the grip of rampant witchcraft, drunkenness and immorality. She intervened to prevent a witchdoctor from pouring boiling oil over a woman spread-eagled on the ground. Cannibalism and slavery between the tribes was widespread.

Once, when instructed to heal a dying chief, Mary knew that if she failed she would be blamed for his death. First she got rid of all the witchcraft charms and the sacrificed chickens lying around his hut, and then she prayed and gave the chief good medicine, nursing him back to health. The wives of the chief were particularly grateful for Mary’s success, because they would have otherwise been killed and buried with the chief, if he had died. These wives were understandably keen to learn about *“The Book.”*

### **Human Sacrifices**

Samuel Marsden, pioneer missionary to New Zealand, witnessed the depth of degradation and the hold of superstition over the Maori people, when the widow of the deceased chief hanged herself with the approval and applause of her parents and brothers. Cannibalism was rife amongst the Maori. One woman confessed that she had killed and eaten 19 children.

Missionaries to the New Hebrides found human sacrifices and cannibalism rife throughout the Pacific. In Fiji, two-thirds of all children were boiled and eaten. Every village had a human butcher. Aged parents were butchered and eaten by their children. Men would even cook their best wife or child as a special feast for their friends.

John Paton, missionary to the New Hebrides, reported on an occasion on Tanna, when three women were killed in a human sacrifice to secure the recovery to health of the chief. When missionary to the South Sea Islands, John Williams, was criticised for imposing foreign Christian standards upon unwilling communities living in *“primitive bliss”*, he noted that these same communities were societies where laziness, promiscuity, human sacrifice and the burial alive of infants had shortly before been commonplace.

### **Massacres in China**

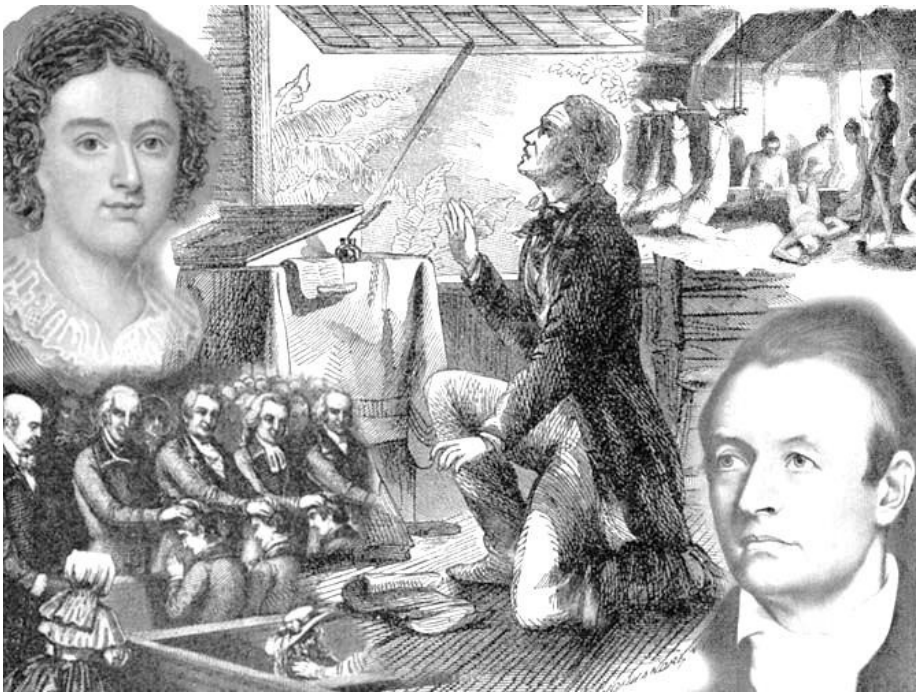
Far from the missionaries interrupting the peace and tranquillity of pagan nations, often the missionaries came to nations that were passing through violent upheavals. When Hudson Taylor first landed in Shanghai in 1854, the country was being torn apart by a vicious civil war, the so-called Taiping rebellion. Rebels held the city and 50,000 Imperial troops besieged it. The house that Hudson was staying in, in Shanghai, was struck by gunfire and the house next to his was destroyed. He frequently witnessed people being beheaded and himself came very close to being lynched on occasion. Over 25 million Chinese were killed in two civil wars that raged in the 1850s and the 1860s in China. Another 10 million died between 1877 and 1879, during a famine in the North of China.

### **Confronting Paganism**

As Dr. George Grant states in his Introduction to *The Greatest Century of Missions*: *“As missionaries moved out from Christendom to the uttermost parts of the earth, they were shocked to discover all the horrors of untamed heathenism. They found abortion all too prevalent, infanticide all too commonplace, abandonment all too familiar and euthanasia all too customary. They were confronted by the spectres of endemic poverty, recurring famine, unfettered disease and widespread chattel slavery ...cannibalism, ritual abuse, patricide, human sacrifice, sexual perversity, petty tyranny, paternalistic exploitation, live burials, exterminative clan warfare and genocidal tribal vendettas all predominated.*

### **Life and Liberty**

*“As missionaries circled the globe, penetrated the jungles and crossed the seas, they preached a singular message: Light out of darkness, liberty out of tyranny and life out of death. To cultures endemic with terrible poverty, brutality, lawlessness and disease, those faithful Christian witnesses interjected the novel Christian concepts*



of grace, charity, law, medicine and the sanctity of life. They overturned despots, liberated the captives and rescued the perishing. They established hospitals. They founded orphanages. They started rescue missions. They built almshouses. They opened soup kitchens. They incorporated charitable societies. They changed laws. They demonstrated love. They lived as if people really mattered. Wherever missionaries went, they faced a dual challenge: **confront sin in men's hearts and confront sin in men's cultures.**"

### Overcoming Obstacles

The obstacles, dangers and difficulties that they had to face and overcome were staggering. By an act of British Parliament, missionaries were illegal in

India. In China, not only was all missionary activity completely illegal, but so was attempting to learn the Chinese language! There was a ban on any Chinese teaching their language to foreigners. The Chinese tutors to Robert Morrison, the first Protestant missionary to China, carried poison on their bodies so that if they were discovered, they could end their lives quickly and escape torture. Because at that time the Chinese forbade foreign women, Robert Morrison had to live apart from his wife, Mary, for most of their lives, once for six years.

America's first foreign missionary, Adoniram Judson, was captured on the high seas and incarcerated in a French prison, from which he escaped. Later he was imprisoned and tortured in "Death Prison", in Burma, for eighteen months.

When a mission organisation wrote to David Livingstone asking: "Have you found a good road to where you are? If so, we want to send other men to join you." Livingstone replied: "If you have men who will come **only** if they know there is a good road, I don't want them. I want men who will come even if there is no road at all."

Livingstone expressed the attitude of most of the missionaries of the 19<sup>th</sup> century when he wrote: "**These privations, I beg you to observe, are not sacrifices. I think that word ought never to be mentioned in reference to anything we can do for Him, Who though He was rich, yet for our sakes became poor.**"

### Sacrifice and Service

C.T. Studd, the famous cricket captain turned pioneer missionary, declared: "**If Jesus Christ be God and died for me, then no sacrifice can be too great for me to make for Him.**"

As he suffered malaria and other attacks, C.T. Studd wrote: "**Some like to live within the sound of Church or Chapel bell, I want to run a rescue shop within a yard of hell.**"

In the words of C.T. Studd: "**Christ's call is to capture men from the devil's clutches and snatch them from the very jaws of hell, to enlist and train them for Jesus and make them a mighty army of God. But this can only be accomplished by red-hot, unconventional, unfettered Holy Spirit religion... by reckless sacrifice and heroism in the foremost trenches.**"

The challenge of Livingstone rings out to us today: "**Can that be called a sacrifice, which is simply paid back as a small part of a great debt owing to our God, which we can never repay... it is emphatically no sacrifice. Say rather it is a privilege!**"

### Dynamic Devotion

Studying the sacrifices and exploits of the pioneer missionaries of the 19<sup>th</sup> century is most challenging and inspiring. These were ordinary people made extraordinary by a dynamic and vibrant Christian faith, which carried them through some of the worst circumstances imaginable.

David Livingstone wrote that we need to be: "**uncommon Christians, i.e. imminently holy and devoted servants of the Most High... let us seek that selfishness be extirpated, pride banished, unbelief driven from the mind, every idol dethroned and everything hostile to holiness and opposed to the Divine will crucified; that holiness to the Lord may be engraved on the heart and evermore characterise our whole conduct.**"



C.T. Studd testified: “ *I once had another religion, ... hunting the Bible for hidden truths, but no obedience, no sacrifice. Then came the change. The real thing came before me... words became deeds. The commands of Christ became not merely Sunday recitations, but battle calls to be obeyed, ... assent to creed was born again into decisive action of obedience.* ”

Hudson Taylor stated that his life was based upon three facts: “***There is a living God. He has spoken in the Bible. He means what He says and He will do all that He has promised.***”

Hudson Taylor wrote of the “*intense longing for God*” that gripped him and of the conviction that never left him that he was called to China.

Hudson Taylor agonised in prayer for China, sometimes praying through the night. He wrote of wrestling with his “*unbelief*” and how “*the Lord conquered my unbelief and I surrendered myself to God for this service.*” At the end of his long life, Hudson Taylor could declare that: “*The sun had never risen upon him in China without finding him at prayer.*” “***...The battle is the Lord’s and He will conquer. We may fail, do fail continually, but He never fails.***”

### **Triumphant Faith**

The pioneer missionaries of the 19<sup>th</sup> century were inspired by a most positive and optimistic faith. They were absolutely convinced that the Lord, who gave the Great Commission, would ensure that it was fulfilled. “***The will of God will never lead you where the grace of God cannot keep you.***”

When, after 7 years of labouring in China, Robert Morrison saw the first Chinese convert, he wrote: “*May he be the first fruits of a great harvest; one of millions who shall believe and be saved.*”

Scotland’s first foreign missionary, Alexander Duff, declared: “*Oh what promises are ours, if we had only the faith to grasp them! What a promise is that in the Great Commission - go and make disciples of all nations, and lo I am with you, even to the end of the world! We go forth amongst the hundreds of millions of the nations; we find gigantic systems of idolatry and superstition, consolidated for thousands of years... they tower as high mountains, but what does faith say? Believe and it shall be. And if any Church on earth will realise that faith, to that Church will the honour belong of evangelising the nations, and bringing down the mountains.*”

When, after 7 years labour in India, Carey was able to witness the conversion of Krishna Pal from Hinduism, Carey declared: “*The Divine grace, which changed one Indian’s heart, could obviously change 100,000!*”

Carey declared: “*The work, to which God has set His hands, will infallibly prosper... we only want men and money to fill this country with the knowledge of Christ. We are neither working at uncertainty nor afraid of the result... He must reign until Satan has not an inch of territory!*” “***God’s cause will triumph!***”

In the words of William Carey’s historic sermon, which launched the modern missionary movement: “***Expect great things from God! Attempt great things for God!***”

### **Discipling Nations**

By God’s grace, Carey was able to successfully campaign against the Hindu practice of **Sati**, where widows were burned alive on the funeral pyres of their deceased husbands. Carey also ended the practice of burning lepers alive. Carey established the first newspaper ever printed in an oriental language, introduced the steam engine to India, pioneered lending libraries, introduced savings banks, pioneered forest conservation, established the first Christian College in Asia (which is still training leaders) and succeeded in producing and distributing over 200,000 Bibles, New Testaments or Gospels in 36 languages, in addition to many books and tracts.

By God’s grace, through the ministry of Mary Slessor, the killing of twins ceased, slave trading in Calabar was eradicated, drunkenness, killing and witchcraft diminished, many schools and Churches were established and most of the people of Calabar came to embrace the Gospel of Christ.

The first public Christian worship service in New Zealand was conducted on Christmas Day, 1814, by Samuel Marsden. By 1845, it was reported that 98% of the Maori’s had embraced Christianity.

By the time John Williams was clubbed to death and eaten by cannibals on the Island of Erromanga, in 1839, he had succeeded in transforming scores of Islands by the Scriptures he had translated, schools he had established, Churches he had built and many thousands of Islanders had come to salvation in Christ.

John Williams had been converted 25 years earlier by a sermon based on “***What is a man profited if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own soul? What shall a man give in exchange for his soul?***” (Matthew 16:26). True to the verse that he had heard on the night of his conversion in 1814, John Williams had found his life by losing it for Christ.

### Faith of their Fathers

Frank Paton followed in his father, John Paton's, footsteps, and became a missionary to the Island where his father had been forced to flee for his life 34 years ago. During his ministry there, Frank was blessed to see the whole population of Tanna won for Christ.

Similarly, Robert Morrison had the joy of seeing his son, John Morrison, follow in his footsteps and pour his heart and soul into the work of bringing the Gospel to the people of China.

All Adoniram Judson's five surviving children grew up to distinguish themselves in Christian service.

Robert Moffat, who produced the first, complete translation of The Bible into an African language, had the joy of seeing five of his seven children actively involved in missionary service. His son, John Moffat, established the first mission station amongst the Matabele.

Two of C.T. Studd's daughters, Edith and Pauleen, who had been born in China, came out and worked alongside him, with their husbands, in his Heart of Africa Mission in the Congo.

### Setting the Captives Free

One of the many fruits of William Wilberforce's life-long crusade against the slavetrade, was that Samuel Crowther, who was born in Yorubaland (modern Western Nigeria) became the first African bishop of the Church of England. Samuel Crowther was captured by African slave traders and sold to a Portuguese trader for transport across the Atlantic, but he was rescued by a British Naval Squadron. Samuel was converted to Christ. Received an education both in Sierra Leone and in England, and in 1843 was ordained as a minister of the Church of England for service with the Church Missionary Society.

In 1864, Crowther was ordained as the first African bishop of the Church of England and directed to undertake a mission along the Niger River. This was to follow up on the anti-slavery expedition led by Wilberforce's successor, T. Foxwell-Buxton. This expedition up the Niger River Valley of West Africa was to overcome the ravages of the slave industry still entrenched there. Of the 145 Europeans on that expedition, 130 were struck down with malaria, and 40 died.

Yet, the expedition succeeded in establishing a missionary centre at Fourah Bay for training liberated slaves to evangelise West Africa. It was built on the very place where a slave market had once stood. The rafters of the roof were made almost entirely from the masts of old slave ships.

Samuel Crowther led converts in burying or destroying witchcraft charms, fetishes and idols, and worked effectively at indigenising an evangelical Anglicanism, which was truly African.

### Mobilising Missions

**Missions is the lifeblood of the Church**, and it is absolutely essential that our congregations and families be presented with these and many other inspiring examples of those whose efforts God blessed in such extraordinary ways.

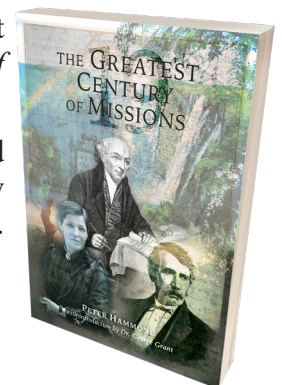
As we launch this new book: *The Greatest Century of Missions*, it is my prayer that it will be used by Christian High Schools, to train seniors in a most important era in history; that Bible Colleges will incorporate it into their missions training programmes; that pastors will include many of these testimonies as sermon illustrations; and that families will read these examples together, feeding their minds and souls with examples of excellence.

I pray that the selected adventures, sacrifices, exploits, pictures and achievements presented in *The Greatest Century of Missions* will whet the appetite of all who read it, to obtain more missionary biographies and to start the lifelong habit of making time to feed mind and soul with what Alexander Somerville described as: "*the noblest object that can engage the enthusiasm of man – the salvation of millions!*"

Please help us make this book known and available to those in your congregation and community. May God be pleased to use *The Greatest Century of Missions* to inspire a new generation of missionaries to expect great things from God and to attempt great things for God.

***Only one life it will soon be past, only what's done for Christ will last.***

Dr. Peter Hammond



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
 admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 21

**SAMUEL AJAYI CROWTHER****Enslaved**

Samuel Crowther was born in Yorubaland (modern Western Nigeria). He was captured by African slavers and sold to a Portuguese trader for transport across the Atlantic.

**Freed**

Samuel was rescued by a British naval squadron and put ashore at Freetown in 1822. This West-African country of Sierra Leone had been established by British Evangelicals to serve as a haven for freed slaves.

**Converted**

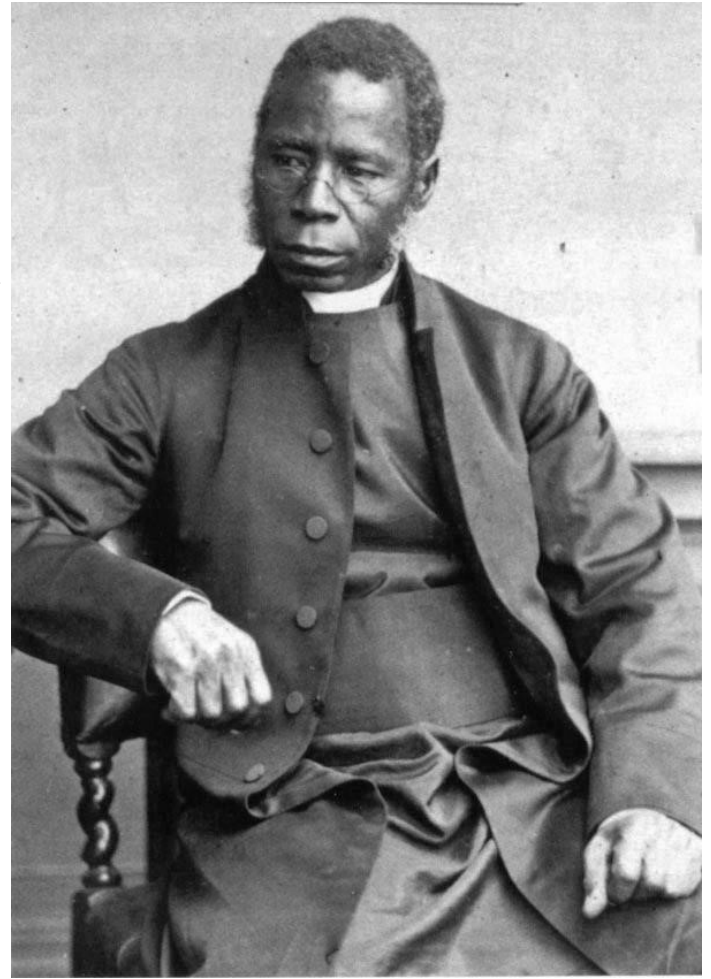
In Sierra Leone, Crowther was converted to Christ. He received an education both in Sierra Leone and in England.

**Called**

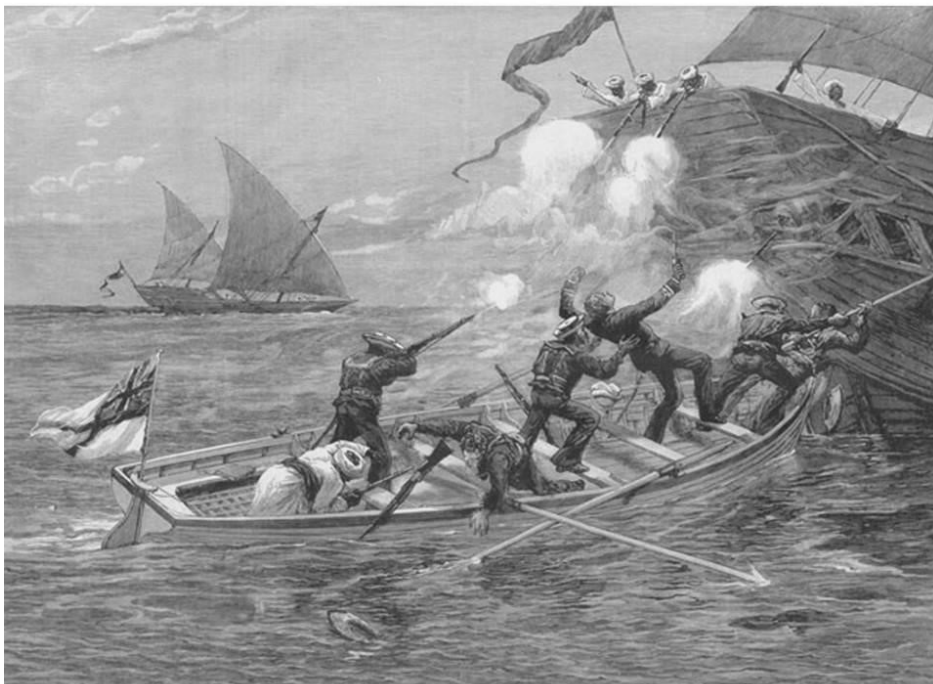
In 1843, he was ordained as a Church of England minister for service with the Church Missionary Society (CMS).

**Impact**

Crowther was one of the leaders of a successful missionary venture that took him and several other former slaves back to their native Yorubaland, where a vigorous Christianity soon developed. Yoruba Christian worship was distinctly Protestant and Evangelical in the Church of England style. Crowther led converts in burying or destroying their traditional charms, fetishes and idols.

**Crusade Against Slavery**

In 1864, Crowther was ordained as an Anglican Bishop, and directed to undertake a mission along the Niger River. This was to follow up on the Niger expedition of 1841, which was led by William Wilberforce's successor, Foxwell Buxton. T. Foxwell Buxton was an Evangelical leader in Parliament and an anti-slavery crusader. His expedition up the Niger River Valley of West Africa was to overcome the ravages of the slave industry still entrenched there. Of the 145 Europeans on that expedition, 130 were struck down with Malaria, and 40 died.

**Transformation**

Yet, the expedition succeeded in establishing a Missionary Centre at Fourah Bay for training liberated slaves to evangelise West Africa. It was built on the very place where a slave market had once stood. The rafters of its roof were made almost entirely from the masts of old slave ships.

**Winning Muslims to Christ**

Samuel laboured diligently to bring the Gospel to the diverse tribes along the Niger River, producing Biblical

tracts and Scripture texts dealing with witchcraft and charms. He also dealt with the common ground between the Qur'an and the Scriptures, and produced Gospel presentations for Muslims founded entirely on Biblical quotations.

### Teaching God's Book

Crowther wrote in 1854 of his contact with King Ogara of Panda: *"I asked if he would like his people to be taught God's Book, and how to worship God as we do in the white man's country, for it was these two things together which made England great, and that they would bring peace and prosperity to any country who received and embraced them ...he replied ...that he was very desirous that war should cease, that his people might trade and be taught God's Book; he wished us many blessings..."*

### Enduring Fruit

Bishop Crowther worked effectively at indigenising an Evangelical Anglicanism, which was truly African. Today there are over 20 million Anglicans in Nigeria.

Dr. Peter Hammond



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 22

## The CAUSES and CATASTROPHIC CONSEQUENCES of The FIRST WORLD WAR

### A Century of Advance

The 19<sup>th</sup> century was the greatest century of missionary advance. It was a century of astounding inventions and of spectacular advances in technology. Many countries in Europe experienced dramatic spiritual Revivals. Christian missionaries won whole tribes and nations to Christ, in the remotest regions of the globe.



### Shattered

1914 shattered Europe. An entire generation of young men died in brutal trench warfare. No other war changed the map of Europe so dramatically.

Three great European empires were destroyed: The German Empire, The Russian Empire and The Austro-Hungarian Empire, that had held the line and protected Europe from the threat of Turkish invasion for centuries.

### A Disastrous Century

1914 marked the end of the greatest century of Christian advance and the beginning of what proved to be the worst century of persecution. The consequences of the First World War continue to have far reaching repercussions to this present day.

### A Catastrophic War

Of the 60 million European soldiers who were mobilised from 1914 to 1918, over 9 million were killed, 7 million were permanently disabled and 15 million were seriously injured. Contemporaries called it The Great War because it was literally greater than any war ever waged before that time. In numbers of soldiers involved, in numbers of casualties, in terms of the disastrous consequences, it was the most catastrophic event in the history of European civilisation.

### When Christians Dominated the World

In 1914 Christian nations ruled virtually the whole world. With the exception of China and the Ottoman Empire, the globe was dominated by Christian powers, either Protestant, as in the case of Britain, Germany and the United States; Roman Catholic as in the case of the Austro-Hungarian Empire, the French Empire, Italy, Spain, Portugal, etc., or Orthodox as in the case of the Russian Empire.

### A Century of Peace and Progress

Following the Battle of Waterloo and the conclusion of the French Revolution and Napoleonic wars, the Congress of Vienna ushered in a century of comparative peace. It was also a century of astounding increases in population growth, and unprecedented increases in productivity and standards of living. The 19<sup>th</sup> century had been a century of incredible achievements, growth and expansion. By 1914, all the inhabited world had been penetrated and, for the most part, mastered by people who had traditionally been known as Christian.

### Great Promise

Christianity came to the beginning of the 20<sup>th</sup> century on a rising and apparently unstoppable tide. Christianity was gaining spectacular momentum as missionaries from Europe were evangelising and discipling virtually every tribe and nation. The Protestant Faith had far outstripped the Catholic and Orthodox branches in missionary activity, vitality and initiative. From being confined almost entirely to North Western Europe, the British Isles, a narrow strip on the Eastern seaboard of North America, and with a small outpost at the Cape of Good Hope, the Protestant Faith in the 19<sup>th</sup> century had become a truly international Faith. It was also the dominant Faith of the most productive, powerful and prosperous nations in both the Northern and Southern hemispheres. Amidst irrepressible optimism, many were openly speaking of the beginning of the Biblical millennium on earth.

**Retreat from Victory**

At the first World Missions Conference in Edinburgh in 1910, delegates were anticipating the completion of the Great Commission within their generation. No one in 1910, would have anticipated the wholesale abandonment of entire nations to communism, false religions and heathenism. Nor would any have predicted that the church would retreat from victory to such an extent that they would even be questioning the existence of the devil, or hell, or reinterpreting marriage to include what God in the Bible describes as perversion and an abomination.

**The Guns of August**

The Christian era of bold missionary expansion came to an abrupt end as the guns of August 1914 erupted. The great European countries which had been the heartland of Christendom, and the source of most of the world's missionaries, devastated each others economies and annihilated millions of one another's young men in what has to be recognised as the most tragic and senseless conflict in history.

**A Cataclysmic Conflict**

Before the First World War, Europe had never been more powerful, or more self-confident. There was no hint of any possible challenge to its leadership of the civilised world. 1914 marks a far more drastic turning point than 1815, or 1648, or any other of the watershed events in its earlier history. As the great nations of Europe mobilised for war against themselves it was said: *The lamps are going out all over Europe, we shall not see them lit again in our lifetime.*

**Disastrous**

Yet, even as that was said, it could not have been anticipated how much destruction and dislocation of Christian civilisation would come from this disastrous conflict. When lamps of political wisdom, spiritual truth, intellectual and artistic progress, moral foundations and economic growth were rekindled, they shone far less brightly in the ancient centres of European civilisation than they had for centuries before.

**Sinister War Mongers**

The sinister bankers who pulled the strings behind the scenes and engineered the auto genocide of Europe, were also the ones who owned many of the companies that made the machine guns, bullets, bombs, shells and artillery that destroyed the cream of Europe. There are numerous studies that have shown the role of Freemason bankers and politicians such as Lord Nathan Rothschild whose goal was to bring down Christian civilisation.

**A Satanic Conspiracy**

Nothing could have stopped the positive onward march of Christianity worldwide, except that the Christians were persuaded to kill one another so enthusiastically and so efficiently. During the course of The Great War, 8% of Great Britain's total population were killed, or wounded, 9% of Germany's total population were killed, or wounded and, 11% of France's entire population were casualties.

**Devastating**

Even more devastating than the actual numbers of people killed, crippled, or severely injured, was the damage to the spiritual life of Europe. Europe went from being a majority church attending population to a continent where most people did not go to any church.

**Secularisation**

The secularisation of Europe and the breakdown of moral standards coincided with a great surge of revolutionary fervour. Marxist communism filled the vacuum left by the collapse of the Russian Empire and by the emergence of many of the new countries in Eastern Europe in place of the Austrian Empire. Along with the spiritual decline of Europe came the decline of Western Europe on the total world scene. The 19<sup>th</sup> century had seen such staggering growth in numbers, productivity, military power and wealth that one would have expected that Europe would have continued to dominate the globe for centuries to come.

**Disillusionment**

For over a thousand years, Europe has been Christendom, the heartland and stronghold of Christian civilisation. The optimism that prevailed in the 19<sup>th</sup> century gave way to profound pessimism after the First World War. The de-Christianisation and secularisation of Europe was not only unprecedented in its scope and speed, but it would have been unthinkable before the First World War. In Europe, the traditional stronghold of the Christian Faith, the proportion of those who called themselves Christian declined and the percentage of those who regularly attended church services fell off even more drastically. While Protestants increased rapidly in Africa, North and South America and in Asia, the numbers of Christians in Europe sharply declined.



### **What could have caused such a Cataclysm?**

It is notable that Social Darwinism had become popular amongst most of the governments of Europe. This thinking emphasized the importance of armed struggle between nations as healthy and necessary for evolution and progress.

### **Entangling Alliances**

There were also the entangling alliances, particularly the *Entente Cordiale* between France and Russia (1894), between Britain and France (1904), and between Britain and Russia (1907), that formed the Triple Entente. The question is why Great Britain would have formed an alliance with their traditional enemies, the French and Russians, against their traditional allies, the Germans? And how did a terrorist act in Sarajevo sever the special relationship between Britain and Germany that had endured for centuries?

### **Diplomatic Dominoes**

It was understandable that Austria was going to deal with her troublesome neighbour Serbia, which had been encouraging and hosting revolutionaries and terrorists against the Austrian Hungarian Empire. However, as Austria presented an ultimatum to Serbia, the Russian Empire mobilised against Austria. This led to Germany mobilising in support of its Austrian ally against Russia. The French were allied to the Russian Empire and were spoiling for a fight to reverse the humiliating military defeat they had suffered at the hands of Germany in 1870.



### **Reversal**

Strangely, King Edward VII had allied Britain to France and Russia, probably out of spite for his parents, Queen Victoria and Prince Albert. So, Britain ended up on the side of its traditional enemies, France and Russia, against its traditionally closest ally, Germany.

### **Hidden Manipulators**

Most of the 60 million soldiers involved in the Great War would have been unable to explain what they were actually fighting about. That they were pawns in a diplomatic power game manipulated by unseen conspirators behind the scenes would have been the furthest thing from most of their minds.

### **British Involvement**

From the British point of view involvement in the First World War is an even greater mystery. No British interests were at stake, and had Britain stayed out of the European conflict it would not have become a World War.

### **What would have happened had Britain stayed out of the Conflict?**

First of all Britain would have kept her Empire. Secondly Germany would have been able to defeat both France and Russia in a matter of months. New treaties would have been signed, some borders may have been adjusted, but no cataclysmic collapse of Empires would have occurred. The death toll would have been a fraction of what it became. America would not have been dragged into the war, Europe would have remained the most powerful industrial, political and military force in the world. The constitutional monarchies in Central and Eastern Europe would have endured and continued to reform. There would have been no power vacuum into which communism could have been born. There obviously would have been no Second World War either. All in all, the world would be a far better and different place.

### **So why did Britain get involved in the First World War?**

The Liberals had been in power in the House of Commons since 1906. Their electoral support was withering away and Herbert Asquith's government was on the verge of collapse. It was clear that they went to war partly to keep the Conservative Party from ousting them in the imminent elections. To those who ask if it is possible that any political leaders could be so small minded as to jeopardise the lives of millions, and the good of their nation, merely to keep their political party in power, recent history continues to confirm that just such corrupt, pettiness continues to predominate amongst many who are meant to be civil servants.



### Unprecedented

Never before, had so much of mankind been engaged simultaneously in war. Never before had mankind massed such large armies, or produced such weapons which worked wholesale destruction on so gigantic a scale.

### The Effects on Germany

The Protestant Faith had originated in Germany. It was the historic centre of Lutheranism. From Germany thousands of Protestant missionaries had gone out to many parts of the world. It was Germany who bore the main brunt of World War I and it was Germany who was crushed and divided by the

outcome of World War II. It was chiefly the Protestant sections of Germany which were betrayed into the Soviet zone and subjected to communist oppression. Millions of Germans were forcibly displaced by the Westward movement of Poland's boundary at the end of World War II. Most of these displaced people were Protestants.

### The Effects on Britain

The involvement of predominantly Protestant Britain in the two World wars had disastrous repercussions on Christianity in that realm. Throughout the 19<sup>th</sup> century Britain had been the greatest source of missionaries worldwide and the greatest financiers of missions worldwide. In both Germany and Great Britain the number of Protestant church members plummeted, missionary involvement declined dramatically and both countries suffered shocking secularisation.

### So who benefited from the First World War?

Many bankers and industrialists amassed stupendous wealth at the expense of the combatants who incurred staggering debts. Those who control the debts control everything. Communism benefited the most, seizing and subjugating all of Russia and, in time, most of Eastern Europe.

### A Time of Revolution

In the wake of the First World War many came to speak of a post-Christian era. As wars and revolutions threw the entire world into disorder, pessimists and critics predicted the imminent disappearance of Christianity. Yet, against all odds, despite having been dealt what had seemed like a deathblow in its heartland, Protestant Christians showed remarkable vitality.

### Recovery

As Christians had overcome the Roman Empire, the Barbarian and Viking invasions, the Arab invasions, the onslaught of the Mongol Empire, the Bubonic plague and the invasions of the Turks, then the upheavals of the French Revolution, Christians adapted and overcame. Christianity experienced dynamic growth in Africa, America, and Asia. Even in Europe, in some of the most unexpected places, behind the Iron Curtain, churches multiplied and faith deepened, despite the most relentless anti-Christian persecution by communist governments.



### Sources:

*A History of Christianity*, by Kenneth Scott LaTourette, Harper and Row Publishers, New York, 1953

*Europe 1815 – 1914*, by Ernst Knapton and Thomas Derry, London, John Murray, 1965

*Best of Enemies – Britain and Germany: Truth and Lies and Two World Wars*, by Richard Milton, ICON books, Cambridge, 2007

*The First World War*, by A.J.P. Taylor, Penguin, London, 1985



**Frontline Fellowship** P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
 admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 23

**The CHRISTMAS TRUCE**

On Christmas Eve 1914, a spontaneous cease-fire was observed across the whole of the Western Front. The Christmas Truce of the First World War, a singular event unprecedented in the history of warfare, initially received widespread media coverage in the *New York Times* of 31 December 1914, followed by British newspapers, such as the *Mirror*, *The Illustrated London News*, and the *Times*, which printed front page photographs of British and German troops mingling and singing Christmas carols.

**Undermining Propaganda**

The French government was the first to severely censor any reports on what they called "*fraternisation with the enemy*." Political pressure was brought to bear to censor all reports of the event from mainstream history books for decades. For years the extraordinary event was known only by word of mouth from participants. The damage caused by the Christmas Truce to propaganda campaigns to demonise the enemy was regarded as a serious threat to the war. It has taken decades to unearth the details of the fascinating events surrounding Christmas 1914.

**Devastating**

In the first five months of the Great War, over a million Europeans had already been killed in action, most by artillery fire. The initially fast moving campaigns had degenerated into static trench warfare with a continuous frontline of barbed wire and trenches running from the North Sea to the Swiss frontier.

**Emily Hobhouse**

The famous Englishwoman, Emily Hobhouse, who had exposed to the world the horrors of Lord Kitchener's scorched earth campaign against the Boer Republics of the Transvaal and Orange Free State and the horrors of the British concentration camps in South Africa, was the most prominent campaigner against British involvement in the First World War.

**Open Christmas Letter**

Emily Hobhouse authored the Open Christmas Letter calling for peace. 101 British women signed Emily's Open Christmas Letter which was endorsed by 155 prominent German and Austrian women in response. Under the heading: "*On Earth Peace, Goodwill towards Men*", Emily Hobhouse wrote: "*Sisters: The Christmas message sounds like mockery to a world at war, but those of us who wished, and still wish, for peace, may surely offer a solemn greeting to such of you who feel as we do.*" She mentioned that "*as in South Africa during the Anglo Boer War (1899-1902), the brunt of modern war falls upon non-combatants, and the conscience of the world cannot bear the sight.*"

## May Christmas Hasten Peace

*"Is it not our mission to preserve life? Do not humanity and common sense alike prompt us to join hands with the women... and urge our rulers to stave off further bloodshed?... May Christmas hasten that day..."*

## Female Solidarity

The German Mothers responded: *"To our English Sisters, sisters of the same race, our warm and heartfelt thanks for Christmas greetings... women of the belligerent countries, with all faithfulness, devotion, and love to their country, can go beyond it and maintain true solidarity with the women of other belligerent nations, that really civilised women never lose their humanity..."*

## Love for One's Enemies

Emily Hobhouse also oversaw the raising of funds and shipping of food and medicines to the women and children of Germany and Austria who were suffering as a result of the English Naval blockade

## Preaching for Peace

Numerous ministers were proclaiming from the pulpit: *"That the guns may fall silent at least upon the night when the Angels sang."* Although these messages were officially rebuffed, and suppressed in the heavily censored media, many of the soldiers in the frontlines seemed to share these sentiments.

## Fraternising with the Enemy

From the first week of December, informal truces were observed by soldiers on the frontline. In a letter dated 7 December 1914, Charles De Gaulle expressed his dismay at *fraternisation with the enemy*, where French and German troops had exchanged newspapers and recovered their dead and organising burial parties in no-mans-land. French General d'Urbal, expressed alarm over soldiers staying too long in the same sector becoming friendly with their enemies, to the extent that they were conducting conversations between the lines and even visiting one another's trenches!

## Compassion for Ones Foes

After heavy rains near Ypres, where the Germans held the high ground and the British the lower ground, English troops came out of their flooded trenches in full view of the Germans who expressed their sympathy and did not open fire on their soaked and vulnerable enemy.

## East Saxon Meets German Saxons

The 2<sup>nd</sup> Essex Regiment recorded on 11 December, in their War Diary, that their officers and men met the German Saxon Korp half way between the trenches and exchanged food, cigarettes, chocolates and conversations.

## Silent Night

On Christmas Eve German soldiers began decorating their trenches with Christmas trees and candles. The Christmas Truce began in the region of Ypres, in Belgium, where the Germans were enthusiastically singing Christmas carols in their trenches. When British soldiers joined in singing Silent Night and then responded with carols of their own, the two sides began shouting Christmas greetings to each other. Shortly after that soldiers spontaneously came out of their trenches and walked across no-mans-land to greet one another, exchange gifts and souvenirs.

## Fellowship in No-Man's-Land

This truce spread rapidly across the entire Western Front with over 100,000 German and British troops involved in this unofficial cessation of fighting. Soon Australian, New Zealand, Canadian, Belgian and French troops joined in the Christmas celebrations in the frozen strip of no-man's-land. Joint worship services were held. Respectful burial services were conducted by the combatants for the dead between their lines. Soldiers swapped ration packs, wine, pies, chocolates and souvenirs, such as buttons, badges and hats.





### Football Between the Frontlines

The next day football matches were played between the lines. British officer Robert Greys wrote of the football match between the 133 Saxon Regiment and his Scottish troops. The Germans won 3 - 2. The Glasgow News on 2 January, reported that the Argyll and Sutherland Highlanders won their match 4 - 1. Royal Field Artillery Lt. Albert Wynn, wrote of their soccer match against the Hanoverians, near Ypres, on Christmas Day.

### Refusal to Open Fire

Commanders threatened repercussions for lack of discipline and numerous officers ordered their artillery to open fire on the fraternising troops in no-mans-land. On none of these occasions did the artillery obey orders. There are numerous complaints on record by officers shocked at the total breakdown of discipline as men point blank refused orders to open fire on their own soldiers, mingling with the enemy, in no-mans-land, on Christmas Day. General Sir Horice Smith-Dorrien, (a survivor of the battle of Isandlwana, during the Anglo-Zulu War), then commanding the British II Corp, issued orders forbidding fraternisation with the enemy and complained that his orders were disregarded by the soldiers!

### Youth Hostel Ministry Inspired

Richard Schirrmann was so impressed by the comradeship experienced between his German regiment and French soldiers during the Christmas Truce, even exchanging addresses with one another, that he went on to found the Youth Hostel Association in 1919, to provide meeting places where young men of all countries could get to know one another.

### The Eastern Front

There was also a general observance of a Christmas Truce on the Eastern Front where German, Austrian Hungarian, and Russian commanders observed cease-fires for the duration of Christmas. Commanders ordered no offensive actions for the duration of both the Western calendar (24 December) and the Eastern calendar (6 January). This two week Christmas Truce was observed throughout the Eastern front, except for the Serbian front.

### Attempts to Crush the Christian Spirit of the Soldiers

Numerous French and British officers were court martialled for participating in this *fraternisation with the enemy*. Whole units had to be pulled back from the front and sent to other fronts, when they displayed reluctance to fire on "enemy" that they had celebrated Christmas with. Numerous artillery units began to fire only at precise locations, at pre-arranged times, to avoid causing casualties. Many instances of soldiers firing high, and ineffectually, were reported.

### 1915 Truces

An Easter Sunday Truce was attempted by German units in 1915, but they were suppressed by British artillery fire. In November 1915 a Saxon unit briefly fraternised with a Liverpool Battalion, and conducted burial services together. In December 1915, there were explicit orders directed by Allied commanders, and elaborate procedures made, to forestall any repeat of the previous Christmas Truce. But even the multiple artillery barrages ordered along the entire frontline, throughout Christmas Day by the British, were not completely effective and a number of truces were observed on the Western Front, Christmas 1915. On some sections of the Western Front, carols and gifts were exchanged between German and British troops and at least one football match, with about 50 soldiers on each side was recorded in 1915.

### Court-Martialed

Sir Iain Colquhoun of the Scots Guards was court-martialed for defying orders by maintaining a short truce to bury the dead between the lines, on Christmas Day 1915. Because he was related to British Prime Minister H.H. Asquith, this punishment was commuted.

### Suppressing Christmas

German attempts in December 1916 and 1917 to observe Christmas Truces were rebuffed by British Artillery barrages.

### Vimy Ridge 1916

Recently evidence has come to light of a successful Christmas Truce in 1916, between German and Canadian soldiers near Vimy Ridge, where they exchange Christmas greetings and presents. The Canadians and Germans visited one another's lines on 25 December 1916.

#### THE POWER OF PEACE IN THE TIME OF WAR THE TRUCE IN THE TRENCHES THAT BROUGHT IN THE NEW YEAR



British and German soldiers fraternising during the Christmas and New Year truce, which, though unofficial, was welcomed on both sides. "At this point," writes the officer who sent us the photograph, "a group of some 100 Tommies of each nationality held a regular mothers' meeting between the trenches. We found our enemies to be humans."

**Memorial in France**

A Christmas Truce Memorial was unveiled in Frelinghien, in France, on 11 November 2008, on the spot where 25 December 1914, the Royal Welsh Fusiliers played football with the German 371 Battalion. The Germans won 2 - 1.



**Imperial War Museum**

The Christmas Truce is now openly acknowledged at the Imperial War Museum in London with photographs of German and British troops celebrating Christmas together.

**Joyeux Noel Film**

The 2005 French film, *Joyeux Noel* dramatizes the Christmas Truce of 1914 through the eyes of French, Scottish and German soldiers on the Western Front.

**The Prince of Peace**

It remains an extraordinary testimony to the power of the Gospel that, during such a terrible time of world war, soldiers of so many armies, on opposite sides, could cease fighting, come out of their trenches and embrace their enemies, in honour of the Prince of Peace

*"For unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given; and the Government will be upon His shoulder. And His Name will be called Wonderful, Counsellor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. Of the increase of His Government and peace there will be no end..."* Isaiah 9:6-7

Dr. Peter Hammond

See also:

- [The Best of Enemies](#)
- [A Tale of Two Conferences](#)
- [How Propaganda Changes Perceptions and People](#)
- [The Causes and Catastrophic Consequences of the First World War](#)
- [Some Surprising Facts About the First World War](#)



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
 admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 24

## GUILT MANIPULATION vs REAL REPENTANCE



*“Seek the Lord while He may be found, call upon Him while He is near. Let the wicked forsake his way and the unrighteous man his thoughts; let him return to the Lord, and He will have mercy on him; and to our God, for He will abundantly pardon. ‘For My thoughts are not your thoughts, nor are your ways My ways’, says the Lord. ‘For as the Heavens are higher than the earth, so are My ways higher than your ways, and My thoughts than your thoughts’.”* Isaiah 55:6-11

How can you tell the difference between real guilt and false guilt?

#### Corporate Guilt or Personal Responsibility?

We live in an age of guilt manipulation, where many reject the concept of an objective standard of right and wrong. Yet, while denying personal responsibility, many will accuse whole nations of corporate guilt.

#### A Brazilian Confession

An example of this was seen at the Cape Town 2010 Third Lausanne Congress on World Evangelisation. On the final Sunday, at the Africa regional meeting, a delegation from Brazil asked to speak to the African participants. Their spokesman then read out a very long declaration, which in very categorical terms declared their guilt for the Slave Trade: “We are guilty of having kidnapped Africans from their homes, transported them across the Atlantic, to excavate our mines and to build our cities.”

#### “Forgive Us and Punish Us!”

The Brazilian spokesman declared: “Our children deserve to be taken from us and forced to be your slaves, to be buried in unmarked graves beneath your cities!” In these, and in many other words, the Brazilians bewailed their guilt, confessed their sin and pleaded with the African delegates to forgive them for this evil and to regard the Brazilians as their own slaves, to do with as they wished.

#### Should Descendants be Held Accountable for The Actions of their Ancestors?

Evidently the Brazilian participants were sincere and their declaration of repentance indicated humility, and a genuine desire to make right the wrongs of long ago. However, as I sat in the auditorium listening to this, the Scripture came to mind: *“The soul who sins shall die. The son shall not bear the guilt of the father, nor the father bear the guilt of the son. The righteousness of the righteous shall be upon himself and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon himself.”* Ezekiel 18:20

#### Confessing Someone Else’s Sin

Were these humble, dedicated Christian Brazilians really personally responsible for the evils of the slave trade? Of course not.

#### Would Two Wrongs Make a Right?

Would it be just for their sons to be sold into slavery in this generation? Would such a wrong make right the wrongs of long ago?



### Is it Biblical?

Then one of the African participants made the comment that it was a pity that this apology had not come from the delegates from Europe, or the United States of America.

From the nodding heads and exclamations of agreement all around me, it was evident that many in the auditorium agreed with this sentiment. But is it Biblical?

### Sin is Specific and Personal

In the Bible sin is very specific. It is the violation of the Law of God. Repentance in the Bible is

specific and personal. We are guilty when we disobey one of God's Commandments. Sin is failing to worship God alone, it is making, or worshipping, an idol, taking God's Name in vain, desecrating the Sabbath, dishonouring our parents, taking innocent life, committing adultery, stealing, bearing false witness and being covetous. In the Bible guilt and repentance are specific and personal, not vague and national.

### Restitution is to be From the Villain to the Victim

There was some discussion about the needs for restitution from America and Europe for the slave trade, but Biblical restitution is to be made by the culprit to the victim – directly and entirely. Restitution is not meant to be some political scam, a cover for corruption, where restitution is demanded from people who didn't do the crime, to be distributed to people who weren't the victims.

### What about the Ongoing Arab Slave Trade?

If the 300 year European and North American involvement in the Atlantic Slave Trade was to be discussed, then why not the 1,400 year Arabic involvement in the Slave trade in North Africa, Central Africa, East Africa, in the Indian Ocean and the Middle East?

### The African Slave Trade

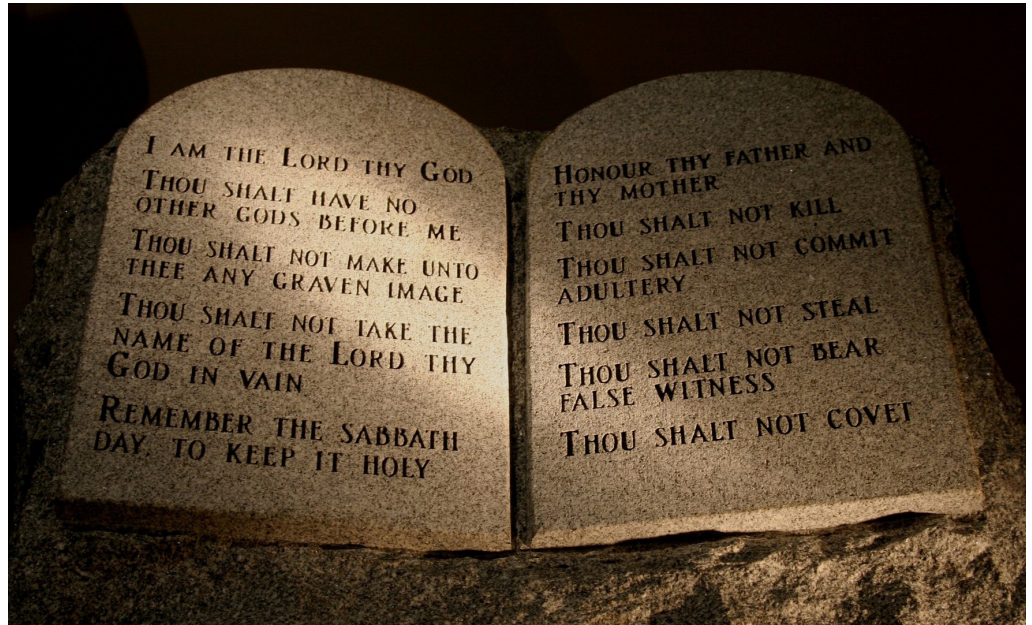
In fact, as the president of Benin pointed out some years ago, everyone in Africa is descended from those who were both the victims of the slave trade, and descended from those who were participants in the slave trade. It is a fact of history that almost every tribe in Africa practised slavery, as part of their criminal justice system, and enslaved neighbouring tribes. The Yao people of Malawi carried out slave raids on the Bemba and Chichewa of Zambia. The Madagascans enslaved Mozambicans. The Ovambo enslaved the Bushmen. The Matebele enslaved Shona people. Congolese tribes enslaved the Pygmies. In Loziland, the paramount chief of the Barotse abolished slavery only in 1906. Ethiopia abolished slavery in 1942. Saudi Arabia only abolished slavery in 1962. Peru abolished slavery in 1968 and India only in 1976. Yet, there are still officially over 27 million slaves in the world today, mostly in the Muslim world.

### Britain's Legacy of Setting the Captives Free

It seemed most unreasonable to single out Great Britain in demands for reparation, for her disgraceful involvement in the slave trade, considering that it was Britain who first pioneered the abolition of the slave trade from 1807. From 1809 the British government mobilised its navy to search suspected slave ships, even foreign vessels, on the high seas. For a century, the Royal Navy was dedicated to setting the captives free, going far beyond clearing the oceans of slave ships, to boldly sailing up unchartered rivers and creeks to storm slave stockades, freeing captives at every turn. The British representative at the Congress of Vienna insisted on Abolition of the slave trade being included in the International Treaty. After the Battle of Waterloo, this treaty was signed by all the European powers (with the exception of Portugal), on 9 June 1815.

### War Against Slavery

For anyone to demand of Great Britain a further apology, for its part in the transatlantic slave trade, betrays an







ignorance of history. Britain's involvement in the slave trade, from 1713 – 1807, was indeed disgraceful. But, led by William Wilberforce, the British nation more than atoned for its guilt in this vile trade in human flesh, by not only setting every slave in Britain free in 1772, but by outlawing the slave trade in 1807, mobilising her navy to suppress the slave trade throughout the 19<sup>th</sup> Century, and setting free all slaves in any territory in which Britain had influence, or control, in 1833. No other nation has done more than Great Britain in fighting and opposing the slave trade.

### British Restitution

The British spent millions of pounds in suppressing the slave trade, and sacrificed much blood in fighting to set the captives free. Britain also invested vast amounts of money into developing Sierra Leone as a free and independent state, where liberated slaves could settle.

### American Restitution

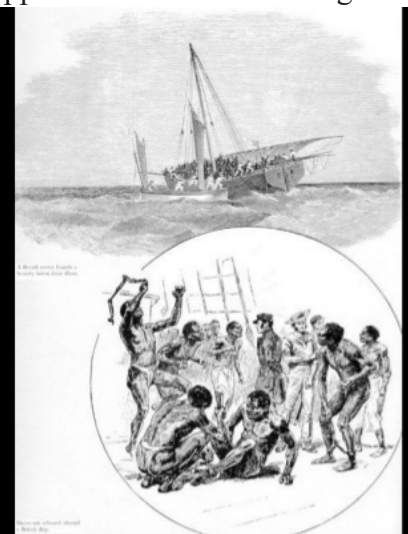
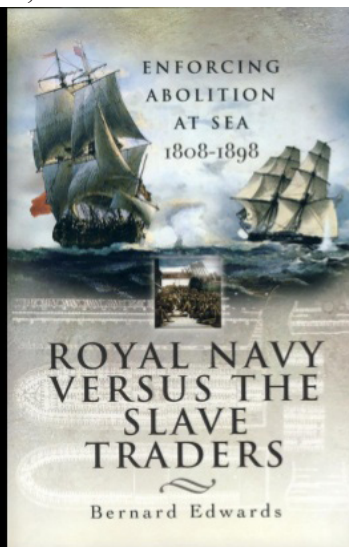
The United States, for their part, engaged in a bloody civil war, in part to set all slaves free, at a cost of over 650,000 of their own people dead. The United States also heavily invested in establishing Liberia as a free state where liberated slaves could settle.

### White Slaves

Some participants at the congress made the comment that all whites are to blame for the slave trade, yet the word 'slave' comes from the East European 'Slavs'. Most of the slaves in the Roman Empire were white people. St. Patrick, the English missionary to the Irish, was once a slave himself, kidnapped from his home in England and taken to Ireland against his will. Millions of whites were enslaved by Muslims throughout the Middle East from the 7<sup>th</sup> Century onwards. Many were kidnapped from coastal towns by Muslim pirates. In 1526, over 200,000 Hungarian Christians were dragged off to slavery in Turkey.

### The Blame Game

If all whites are to blame for the slave trade, which a few whites, over 200 years ago, were involved in, are all blacks to blame for the murders and massacres which many tribes engaged in over the last 200 years? What about the Arabs, who are still involved in the slave trade today?



For a century, the Royal Navy was dedicated to setting the captives free, going far beyond clearing the oceans of slave ships,



### Blaming the Benefactors

Considering that many whites opposed the slave trade, and that the British Empire did the most to end the slave trade, is it reasonable to blame Britain for an evil that she vigorously fought against, and eradicated, throughout the 19<sup>th</sup> Century? What about great emancipators, such as Dr. David Livingstone, Samuel Baker, Dr. James Kirk, Henry Morton Stanley, and other dedicated emancipators who set countless captives free?

### Ignoring Past Accomplishments and Present Realities

Are claims for restitution from Great Britain and the United States reasonable, when both these nations abolished the slave trade over 200 years ago? Bearing in mind that both Britain and the United States have invested many billions of pounds and dollars into developing Africa, should the demands for restitution not more rightly be demanded from the Arab world which has been enslaving Africans and waging *Jihad* against Christians to the present day?

### How Far Back do we Go?

How far are we to go in corporate and national guilt? Must the Italians repent for, and do restitution for, the devastations, wars, aggressions and enslavement of the Roman Empire?

Must the Greeks do restitution for the conquests of Alexander the Great?

Are the Iranians to do restitution for the invasions and oppression by the Persians?

Are the Danes and Norwegians responsible for the death and destruction caused by the Viking raids?

What restitution should be required of the French for the devastation caused by the Napoleonic wars?

What about the Japanese for atrocities committed in World War 2?

Have the British and Americans undertaken sufficient restitution for bombing whole cities like Hamburg and Dresden, incinerating hundreds of thousands of men, women and children in civilian centres?

### What about Contemporary Crimes?

What restitution has been done by the United Nations and Organisation of African Unity for destroying Rhodesia and installing Mugabe's murderous regime in Zimbabwe?

What restitution have the Cubans undertaken for the wholesale atrocities and massacres perpetrated in Angola?

Have the World Council of Churches and their associate members duly repented, apologised publicly and undertaken restitution for supporting and financing terrorists who murdered missionaries in Rhodesia?

Have the Congolese undertaken national repentance for the massacres of hundreds of missionaries and tens of thousands of Christians in the Sumba Uprising in the 1960s?

Have the Kenyans apologised, and repented for, the Mau Mau murders and mutilations?

What about ANC supporters for the petrol bombs, necklace murders, landmines and car bombs?

### Are Whole Races Guilty for the Crimes of Some?

If all whites are guilty for what some whites did over 200 years ago, are all blacks guilty for what some blacks have done in murders and mutilations of missionaries and farmers more recently?

### It is Unreasonable to Blame Christians for what Pagans Have Done

No, it is not reasonable to blame Protestant Christians for what Catholic Inquisitors and Conquistadors may have done centuries ago. Christian whites are not responsible for what pagan whites have done at other times and places. It is not fair to blame Christian blacks for what non-Christian blacks have perpetrated.



The British spent millions of pounds in suppressing the slave trade, and sacrificed much blood in fighting to set the captives free.



### **Psychological Guilt**

Biblically, true guilt is when I personally violate a specific Command in Scripture. False guilt, or psychological guilt, is a result of selected focus, distortion of reality and ignorance of history. It is vague and it involves guilt manipulation.

### **Forgiveness and Freedom**

When we repent of our personal guilt in violating God's Commands the result is forgiveness, freedom, healing and restoration. However, you can repent for false, or psychological, guilt every day for decades, but you will never find freedom and forgiveness from false guilt – because the devil is a hard taskmaster.

### **Condemnation Enslaves**

The Holy Spirit brings conviction of sin, but the devil brings condemnation. You can easily tell the difference. Conviction by the Holy Spirit leads to Repentance. On the other side of repentance is forgiveness, freedom, healing and restoration. By way of contrast, condemnation from the devil and his disciples paralyses and enslaves us.



### **Is Colonialism to Blame?**

At the congress I also heard some people grumbling about colonialism. However, the blaming of all the ills of Africa on colonialism reveals an ignorance of history. Much of Africa was not colonised, but became protectorates as part of the European crusade against the slave trade. Sudan was once a colony of Egypt, but never of Britain. Sudan became a protectorate of Great Britain. Similarly, Lesotho and Swaziland were never colonies, but protectorates. Britain's involvement in Malawi was primarily to end the slave trade there and set the captives free.

### **To End Slave Raids**

Most of North Africa came under European control in response to raids by Muslim Barbary pirates on Southern Europe. The colonisation of North Africa began as campaigns to close down the slave markets and prevent the ports of North Africa from being used for slave raids on Southern Europe.

### **Developing a Continent**

The fact is that Africa was in a desperate state in the mid 19<sup>th</sup> Century. Yet, in a few generations, European involvement brought about a dramatic improvement in the standards of living of millions of Africans - many benefits and blessings of civilisation, medicine, literacy, education, roads, railways, bridges, aircraft, telecommunications, trade and industry, tourism, jobs, employment, freedom and the Gospel.

### **Benefits and Balance**

On balance it is clear that there were far more benefits and blessings to the European involvement in Africa than burdens. Never, in all of history, has any continent done more to aid in the development of another continent. Future historians will look back in amazement at how Europe benefited Africa in less than a century. European settlers fed the starving, cared for the sick, liberated nations in bondage and uplifted the standards of living to unprecedented levels.

### **Rewriting History**

Yet, another example of guilt manipulation can be seen in a most dishonest book, which is being promoted on shelves at this time: *"The Kaisers Holocaust."* What this book ignores is the context of centuries of incessant inter-tribal genocide and the ravages of the Herero and Damara who were annihilating and enslaving the other tribes of South West Africa (Namibia). Local chiefs pleaded with the missionaries to request colonial intervention. The Rhenish Mission requested the involvement of Great Britain, but their colonial authorities claimed that they were too thinly spread and overcommitted elsewhere. Aside from annexing Walvis Bay, the only potential sea port on the coast, the British had no further interest in South West Africa.

## German Intervention

At this point the missionaries approached the German Chancellor, Otto von Bismarck, who persuaded the Kaiser to send a small detachment to attempt to bring peace to the warring tribes of South West Africa. This they achieved in a remarkably short time. When the Herero revolted against this new rule of law the result was the War of 1904 to 1905. Missionaries, settlers and officials were murdered and mutilated and the Kaisers' soldiers responded with decisiveness to put down the rebellion. This was done to the applause and approval of the other tribes in South West Africa who had all suffered for far too long at the hands of the Herero and Damara. That this defensive war has now been reinterpreted in such a sinister and manipulative way is outrageous. ***“Woe to those who call evil good and good evil; who put darkness for light and light for darkness; who put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter! Woe to those who are wise in their own eyes and prudent in their own sight.”*** Isaiah 20:21

## Ignorance Leads to Exploitation

Ignorance of history makes one susceptible to guilt manipulation. Communism not only seeks to re-write history, but to hijack and pervert Christianity. Both in the Soviet Union and Red China the commissars set up public confessions where landowners would confess to being *“bourgeois” “enemies of the people”*. Public repentance and confession sessions to humiliate the previous elite, and thereby to lift up the Commissar and Communist Party members, was seen as part of “class warfare.”

## National Repentance

There is a place for national repentance before God. Ezra 9, Nehemiah 9, and Daniel 9 are examples where prophets led the people of God in repentance of behalf of the sins of the nation. However, this repentance was based upon specific transgressions of God's Law and this national guilt was confessed to God, not to men.

## Personal Repentance

When we are guilty of breaking God's Commandments we must humble ourselves, seek God's face, turn from our wicked ways and pray. We should humbly kneel before God in full surrender, praying the Psalms, working through the Ten Commandments, listing out our sins and naming them in repentance and confession before Almighty God.

## Restitution

Then we should do Restitution, such as Zacchaeus, returning, repairing and restoring. Reconciliation with family members and friends is also a natural outworking of Repentance before God. We should list the people with whom we need to make right with. Make that appointment. Initiate that phone call. Write that letter.

## Are You Personally Guilty?

Are you guilty of idolatry? Blasphemy? Disrespect? Desecrating the Lord's Day? Malice? Immorality? Theft? Greed? Gossip? Pride? Envy? Covetousness? Selfishness? Bitterness? Unforgiveness? If God was to speak to you today, what sins would He confront you with? You know He wouldn't be bringing up other people's sins from long ago. He would be dealing with what you personally are responsible for and guilty of. *“The lust of the eyes, the lust of the flesh, and the pride of life.”*

## Ensure that Your Relationship with God is Right

We have enough sins of our own that we are personally guilty of, without wasting our time following the political agenda of guilt manipulators seeking to get rich out of other people's misfortune.

***“If you abide in My Word, you are My disciples indeed. And you shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you free ... Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed.”*** John 8:31-35

***“Seek the Lord while He may be found, call upon Him when He is near. Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man His thoughts; let him return to the Lord and He will have mercy on him; and to our God, for He will abundantly pardon.”***

*Dr. Peter Hammond*



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
 admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 25

## The BOLSHEVIK REVOLUTION



This year marks 100 years since the catastrophic Bolshevik Revolution of 1917.

The 20<sup>th</sup> Century proved to be the bloodiest century in all of history. Humanism proved to be the most destructive religion of all time. Far more people have been killed in the name of Atheism than by all other religions combined.

**Worst Century**

Historian Paul Johnson observed that *"the 20<sup>th</sup> Century state has proved itself the greatest killer of all time."* The 20<sup>th</sup> Century has seen the worst atrocities

ever committed. The word *"genocide"*, a new term coined in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century, describes what has occurred repeatedly in secular humanist states – which had first disarmed their populations. More Christians were martyred for the Faith in the 20<sup>th</sup> century than in all other centuries combined.

**Social Darwinism**

Darwinian evolutionism with its *"survival of the fittest"* ideology has devalued human life. If man is not created in the image of God, and if there is no God in Heaven, Who will judge the living and the dead, if there are no objective standards of right and wrong, then life becomes cheap. When you devalue God, you devalue life.

**Devaluing Life**

What are people according to atheists who believe in evolution? *"A hairless ape"* – Schoenberg; *"A mere insect, an ant..."* – Church; *"An accidental twig"* – Gould; *"A rope stretched over an abyss"* – Nietzsche; *"A fungus on the surface of one of the minor planets"* – Du Maurier; *"A jest, a dream, a show, bubble, air..."* – Thornbury; and *"I see no reason for attributing to man a significant difference in kind from that which belongs to a grain of sand."* – Oliver Wendell Holmes

**Moral Relativism**

When atheism takes hold of a society, moral relativism is inevitable. Nothing is sacred. There is no objective standard of right and wrong, no God, no eternal Day of Judgement. No hope of eternal justice. God's Creation becomes cheap. As the existentialist writer Jean-Paul Sartre explained: *"Without God all activities are equivalent... thus it amounts to the same thing whether one gets drunk alone, or is a leader of nations."*

**War Against God**

Historian Paul Johnson commented on the advance on atheism in modern history: *"Nietzsche wrote in 1886: 'The greatest event of recent times, that God is dead, that the belief in the Christian God is no longer tenable, is beginning to cast its first shadows over Europe.' Ultimately the collapse of the religious impulse would leave a huge vacuum. The history of modern times is in great part the history of how that vacuum had been filled."*





### Death Cult

As Dr. James Kennedy in *"What If Jesus Had Never Been Born?"* observes: *"That vacuum has been filled with the totalitarian state, the loss of freedom for millions, the concentration camp and the GULAG, the rise of abortion, infanticide, euthanasia and suicide, crime out of all proportions, and the most savage wars in the history of the world."*



### Gangster Statesmen

The triumph of secular humanism with its atheism, evolutionism and situation ethics has led to the rise of gangster statesmen such as Vladimir Lenin, Joseph Stalin, Mao Tse Tung, Fidel Castro, Pol Pot, Robert Mugabe and many more like them.

### The Greatest Killer

At least 180 million people were killed by secular governments in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century. That is a very conservative estimate. We are not here talking about people who have died in wars caused by secular humanist states, because that would massively increase the body count. No, over 180 million people have been killed by their own secular humanist governments in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century. The greatest threat to life in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century was not firearm accidents, or crime, or even wars! More people were killed by their own governments, in peace time, than were killed by foreign invaders in wartime.

### A Harvest of Horror

Dr. David Barrett, editor of the massive *World Christian Encyclopaedia*, and author of *Cosmos, Chaos and Gospel*, and *Our Globe and How To Reach It*, documented that Soviet dictator Joseph Stalin was responsible for killing over 40 million people. Joseph Stalin closed down over 49,000 churches, and attempted the liquidation of the entire Christian Church. Similarly, communist dictator of China Mao Tse Tung launched the Great Proletariat Cultural Revolution, *"History's most systematic attempt ever, by a single nation, to eradicate and destroy Christianity..."* Mao was responsible for killing about 72 million people. The communist takeover of Cambodia in 1975 resulted in the death of up to 3 million people. A full third of the total population. When we add to these the death toll of communist regimes in Korea, Vietnam, Laos, Afghanistan, Ethiopia, Angola, Mozambique, Poland, Czechoslovakia, Hungary, Cuba, and Zimbabwe, the body count is staggering.





### Humanism in Action

The terrifying thing about secular humanist states is that there is no authority above the state to which one can make an appeal. The concept of "inalienable rights" endowed by the Creator is of course impossible in a secular state. If the state itself is the highest authority, then there are no limits to the abuses and oppression that unrestrained human nature is capable of. The humanist state inevitably leads to tyranny and despotism. As Dostovesky so eloquently put it: "If God is dead, then all things are possible!"



### Documentation of Death

The publication of *The Black Book of Communism* created a sensation. First published in French and later translated in to English, the Black Book is a scholarly, detailed account of the crimes of communism starting with the Russian Revolution and continuing through Eastern Europe, Red China, North Korea, Vietnam, Cambodia, Ethiopia, Mozambique, Angola and Afghanistan. At almost 900 pages long, the Black Book's exhaustive indictment of communism is all the more compelling because all six of its authors were once communists. They are researchers, professors and journalists associated with the Paris based Centre for the Study of History and Sociology of Communism. The editor of *The Black Book of Communism*, Stephane Courtois is also the editor of the *Communisme* magazine.

### Victims of Communism

As the Foreword declares: "Ten years ago, the authors of the Black Book would have refused to believe what they now write..." However their "exploration of the Soviet archives..." forced them, out of a "duty of remembrance" to the millions of victims murdered under Marxist regimes, to "spare a little compassion for the victims of the inhumanity so long meted out by so many of its own partisans." Their intention was that the Black Book serve, as both history and as a memorial to those victims whose very memory had been wiped out.

### Communist Atrocities

In his Introduction, Stephane Courtois declares: "The fact remains that our century has outdone its predecessors in its bloodthirstiness...indeed (communism) occupies one of the most violent and most significant places of all..."

The *Black Book* indicts the Soviet Union's communist leaders with the following crimes (amongst many others):

- The execution (without trial) of tens of thousands of hostages and prisoners and the murder of hundreds of thousands of workers and peasants in Russia from 1918-1922 under Vladimir Lenin.
- Deliberately destroying all food and crops so as to starve to death 5 million people in Russia in 1922.
- The extermination of the Cossaks in 1920.
- The liquidation of 690,000 people in the great purge of 1937-1938.
- The destruction of 4 million Ukrainians and 2 million other people in the man-made and systematically perpetrated dekulakisation famine of 1932-1933.

### Atheism's Archives

The Black Book presents a very conservative estimate of the number of civilians murdered by Marxist regimes based on the Marxist regime's own records: 20 million in the USSR; 65 million in Red China; 1 million in Vietnam; 2 million in North Korea; 2 million in Cambodia; 1.5 million in Afghanistan, and so on. The Black Book of Communism documents that, according to the communist regimes' own archives, the total death toll is at least 100 million people killed by communist governments between 1917 and 1991.

### Methods of Barbarism

*"These crimes tend to fit a recognisable pattern... the pattern includes execution by... firing squads, hanging, drowning, battering, and, in certain cases, gassing, poisoning, or 'car accidents'; destruction of the population by starvation, through man-made famine, the withholding of food, or both; deportation, through which death can occur in transit (either through physical exhaustion or through confinement in an enclosed space) ...or through forced labour (exhaustion, illness, hunger, cold)... Thus in the name of an ideological belief system were tens of millions of innocent victims systematically butchered."*

### Communist Carnage

The Foreword of The Black Book declares: *"Communism has been the great story of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century. Bursting into history from the most unlikely corner of Europe amid the trauma of World War I, in the wake of the cataclysm of 1939-1945 it make a giant leap westward... and an even greater one eastward to the China Seas. With this feat... it had come to rule a third of mankind and seemed poised to advance indefinitely. For seven decades it haunted world politics, polarising opinion between those who saw it as the socialist end of history and those who considered it as history's most total tyranny."*

### Colossal Cruelty

With socialist fables of their *"worker's paradise"* now consigned to what Trotsky called *"the ash heap of history"*, it now has to be admitted that the secular humanist state has been *"a tragedy of planetary dimensions... the communist record offers the most colossal case of political carnage in history."* As The Black Book documents, communist states did not merely commit criminal acts, *"they were criminal enterprises in their very essence, on principle, so to speak, they ruled lawlessly, by violence and without regard for human life."* What is also remarkable is that these atrocities were committed by regimes who claimed that they were building *"a worker's paradise"*, heaven on earth. However, rather than delivering paradise, all communism succeeded in was creating hell on earth. *"They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves of depravity..."* 2 Peter 2:19

### More Than Statistics

There is a danger that as we list the statistics and read the mind numbing numbers of the victims of secular states, we can be hardened. As Joseph Stalin observed: *"The death of one person is a tragedy, but the death of millions is just a statistic."* But we need to remind ourselves that these were real people, and whole families that were maimed, mutilated and murdered.

### Those Who Hate God Love Death

If we were to add to the number of those victims murdered by their own government in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century the pre-born babies who have been killed by abortion, and those old and sick people killed by euthanasia, in secular states, the death toll would approach one billion people. That is 1,000 million victims killed by secular states in the 20th Century alone. *"There is no one righteous, not even one; there is no one who understands, no one who seeks God. All have turned away, they have together become worthless; ...their throats are open graves; their tongues practice deceit. The poison of vipers is on their lips. Their mouths are full of cursing and bitterness. Their feet are swift to shed blood; ruin and misery mark their ways..."* Romans 3:10-17

### The Bitter Harvest

As Dr. James Kennedy observed: The 20<sup>th</sup> Century is *"one of mass murder, genocide and institutionalised terrorism, the fruits of that phantom faith in the secular state that persists in promising liberation even as it attacks the most fundamental human attachments."* *"The fool says in his heart, there is no God. They are corrupt, their deeds are vile; there is no one who does good."* Psalm 14:1

### Most Destructive

The bitter harvest of atheism proves that humanism is the most destructive religion in all of history. The secular state is the greatest killer ever and secular states have made the 20<sup>th</sup> Century the bloodiest century of all time. The Bolshevik Revolution was one of the most catastrophic events of all time. *"...Should you help the wicked and love those who hate the Lord? Therefore the wrath of the Lord is upon you."* 2 Chronicles 19:2

Dr. Peter Hammond



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
 admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



Chapter 26

The IRON CURTAIN and The COLD WAR



Winston Churchill, in a speech at Westminster College, Fulton, Missouri, 5 March 1946, declared that “*An Iron Curtain has descended across the continent*”. From Stettin in the North to Trieste in the South barbed wire and barricades, walls and machine gun towers were going up, sealing off the captive nations occupied by the Soviet Union from their neighbours in the West. The Iron Curtain divided a continent and trapped hundreds of millions of people under communism.

The Soviet dictator, Joseph Stalin, declared that the Second World War was not a disaster but a great opportunity to extend communism into the very heart of Europe.

**Poland Betrayed**

Even Poland, for whose freedom Great Britain had entered the war, was now little more than a satellite of the Soviet Empire ruled by men chosen by Moscow. Its population was now imprisoned behind a line of barbed wire, watchtowers and mine fields – a physical iron curtain.

**Secret Police**

To spy on it’s captive populations the Soviet empire set up secret police. In the Soviet Union it was the KGB, in Bulgaria it was the DS, in Czechoslovakia the StB,

in Hungary the AVB, in Poland the SB, in Romania the Securitatea, and in East Germany it was the STASI (the Ministry of State Security). The STASI maintained a huge network of 90,000 secret police and 175,000 paid informants. They kept files on 4,000,000 East Germans – a quarter of the population.

**Berlin Blockade**

The Berlin Wall was manned by 15,000 guards – the so called *Volkspolizei* (VOPOS). When Joseph Stalin attempted to starve West Berlin into submission by cutting off all electricity and supplies on 23 June 1948 the Western powers responded with the Berlin Airlift. The Berlin blockade was the first serious global crisis of the Cold War. West Berlin was kept alive by an airlift of over 150 aircraft supplying an average of 5,000 tons per day. By the time the Soviets ended the blockade on 12 May 1949 over 2.5 million tons had been delivered at the cost of 60 aircrew who had died in aircraft crashes.

**Korean War**

There were numerous hot fronts in the Cold War. The Cold War included a full scale military war in Korea where 2 million died in the three year conflict. Evidence has since surfaced that Stalin was planning to follow up the Korean attack with a military offensive in Europe. He was deterred by the quick international response in Korea.

**Protests in Berlin**

After the death of Joseph Stalin (5/3/53), over 100,000 East Berlin workers protested against the Soviet occupation. Two Soviet armoured divisions were sent into East Berlin to crush the protest in June 1953. Over 100 were killed and 25,000 arrested.





### Uprising in Hungary

In July 1956 a full scale uprising in Hungary shook the Soviet Empire. Mass demonstrations demanded the withdrawal of Soviet troops, and in Budapest a massive statue of Stalin was toppled. Soviet troops poured into Hungary and over 20,000 Hungarians were killed in the repression. Tens of thousands more were arrested and imprisoned. 250,000 Hungarians fled to the West.

### Cuban Missile Crisis

The Cold War almost went nuclear during the Cuban missile crisis, October 1962. The vicious conflicts in Vietnam, Laos and Cambodia (1963-1975) were hot parts of the Cold War.

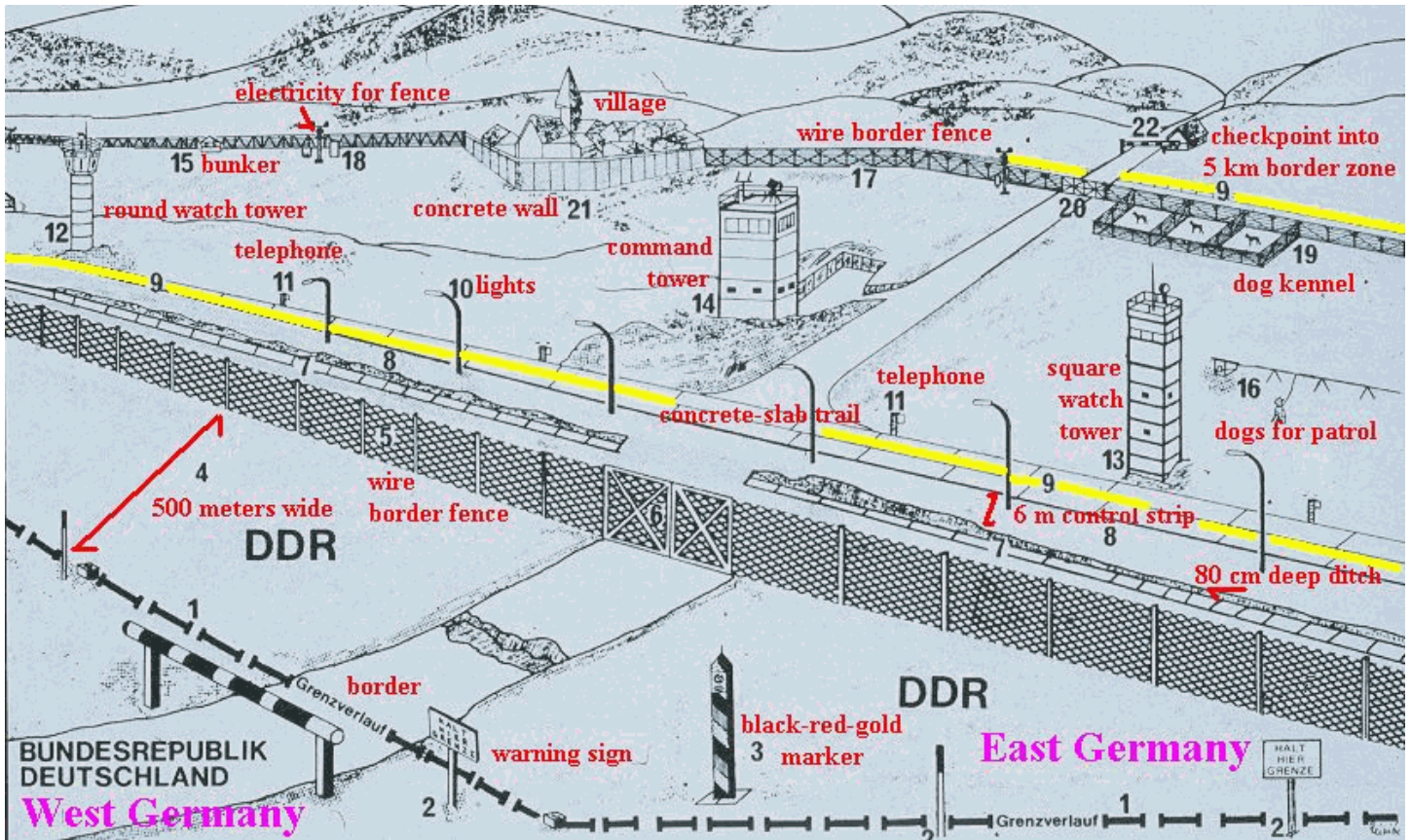
### Invasion of Czechoslovakia

Anyone who believed that communism could be reformed from within was shaken by the Soviet invasion of Czechoslovakia in 1968. Czech communist party chief, Alexander Dubcek, attempted to create “*socialism with a human face.*” As a result of economic reforms in Czechoslovakia, the other East European satellite states complained that their positions were being undermined by the reforms in Czechoslovakia. The response was that Leonid Brezhnev ordered a full scale Warsaw Pact invasion of Czechoslovakia to restore orthodox communism.

The Prague Spring ended in August 1968 as half a million Warsaw Pact troops invaded Czechoslovakia and overwhelmed the courageous resistance of Czech patriots.







### Détente Deception

The Soviet Empire reached its peak during the period of Détente, as they sponsored, trained and armed revolutionaries to seize power in Cambodia, Laos and Vietnam in 1975, Ethiopia in 1974, Guinea Bissau, Angola and Mozambique in 1975, Grenada and Nicaragua in 1979 and Rhodesia/Zimbabwe in 1980. The Soviet invasion of Afghanistan in 1979 was a major wake up call to those in the West who still believed in Détente.

### Freedom Goes on the Offensive

As a result of this unprecedented Soviet advance there was a backlash throughout the West, epitomized by staunch anti-communist US President, Ronald Reagan, British Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher and West German Chancellor Helmut Kohl. The West went on the offensive, directly supporting the anti-communist Solidarity trade union movement in Poland, which soon organised nationwide strikes and protests against the Soviet occupation. The USA began to arm and support anti-communist resistance movements as far afield as in Nicaragua, Afghanistan and Angola.

### Bankrupting the Soviets

Ronald Reagan's policies forced the Soviets back onto the defensive and strategically undermined their economy. Spectacular re-armament programmes and the space based Strategic Defence Initiative (SDI) quickly left the Soviets far behind in the arms race and totally bankrupted the Soviet Union in their futile attempt to keep up with America.

### The Iron Lady

British Prime Minister, Margaret Thatcher's determination to fight to reclaim the Falkland Islands, after the Argentinean invasion, helped convince the Soviets that the West was not nearly so decadent and weak as they had imagined. Thatcher's success in reviving the British economy also helped demonstrate that capitalism had a future even while communism was bankrupting the Soviet Union in Eastern Europe. The Iron Lady had this to say about the Berlin Wall: "*The Berlin Wall stands as concrete proof that when people have a choice, they choose to be free ... Freedom has its problems – but we've never needed to build walls to keep our people in.*"

### Defeating the Communists

Brave anti-communist resistance fighters in Mozambique, Angola, Nicaragua and Afghanistan severely bled the Soviet forces, inflicting serious defeats upon them. The Rhodesian resistance throughout the 60s and 70s had set back the advance of communism in Southern Africa and the destruction of entire Cuban mechanized divisions in Angola by South African conventional forces helped convince the Soviet Union that they would not even be able to win a conventional war against the West.



### Recognising Reality

Russian soldiers began to refer to Afghanistan as their ‘Vietnam’. As Russian casualties exceeded 20,000 in that conflict, the ongoing political crisis in Poland, and widespread resistance to communism throughout the Soviet empire helped convince the Soviet leaders that their bankrupt system was doomed.

### Prayer and Protests

As candlelit prayer vigils and protests spread from Leipzig, through Dresden, to all of East Germany, the East German government was bankrupt and tottering. Gorbachev’s Soviet Union was also bankrupt and could no longer bail them out. So Erich Honecker, the dictator of East Germany, turned to the West Germans (who in the past had always been willing to provide enough to keep East Germany going). This time however, the West German Chancellor, Helmut Kohl, was not willing to bail them out. He demanded reforms.

### The Fall of the Wall

While governments negotiated, the people in both East and West Berlin rose up to breach the wall and began to dismantle it physically. The leaders were overwhelmed by events. Days after the Berlin Wall collapsed, mass demonstrations broke out in Czechoslovakia. Vaclav Havel, long time leader of the Resistance movement and prisoner of the communists, rose to power and dismantled communism in Czechoslovakia. Street fighting erupted in Romania to overthrow the brutal communist dictator Nicolai Ceausescu. Soon resistance spread to Bulgaria where the communists were overthrown in December 1989. In Hungary the communist government was overthrown in October 1990. In Albania the first free elections were held in March 1991. Yugoslavia split into different republics as each broke away from the communist control in Belgrade. Soon the Baltic Republics – Estonia, Latvia and Lithuania were demanding their independence from the Soviet Union.



### The End of the Soviet Union

In August 1991 a coup in the Soviet Union was frustrated in its attempt to return the country to hard line communism. Boldly waving the white, blue and red Russian flag, Boris Yeltsin abolished the Soviet Union and pulled down the Soviet Flag. The Cold War had formally ended.

### The War on Terror

But even as the Cold War with Soviet Union communism ended, a new war was starting with radical Islamic terrorists declaring war on the West.

Winston Churchill’s observation of communists is instructive: *“There is nothing they despise more than weakness. There is nothing they respect more than strength.”* The Cold War was won by a combination of Christian courage by the persecuted Christians who endured decades of brutality, steadfast resistance by brave anti-communist soldiers who fought the Soviets to a standstill, persistent prayer and pressure from Christians in the West and the bold strategy of Ronald Reagan, which dismantled the Evil Empire.

*“While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption...”* 2 Peter 2:19



**Frontline Fellowship** P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
 admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 27

**How The NEW WORLD ORDER is HIJACKING CIVILISATION**

History testifies how God has blessed and used the Christian nations to bless all the families of the nations of the earth. The Protestant nations of Western Europe have a great Christian heritage. Despite violent opposition, Protestants emerged from the fires of persecution to change lives, make history and transform nations. Faithful believers contended for the Faith, preserved and translated God's Word, Reformed the Church and vigorously proclaimed the Word of God to all nations.

**A Heritage of Faith and Freedom**

Christian civilisation achieved the highest levels of productivity, innovation, scientific discoveries, medical advances, missionary outreaches, works of mercy, successfully campaigned to end the slave trade and set the captives free, laying foundations for justice through the rule of law. The legacy of Faith and freedom through Christian Europe is unparalleled in the history of the world.

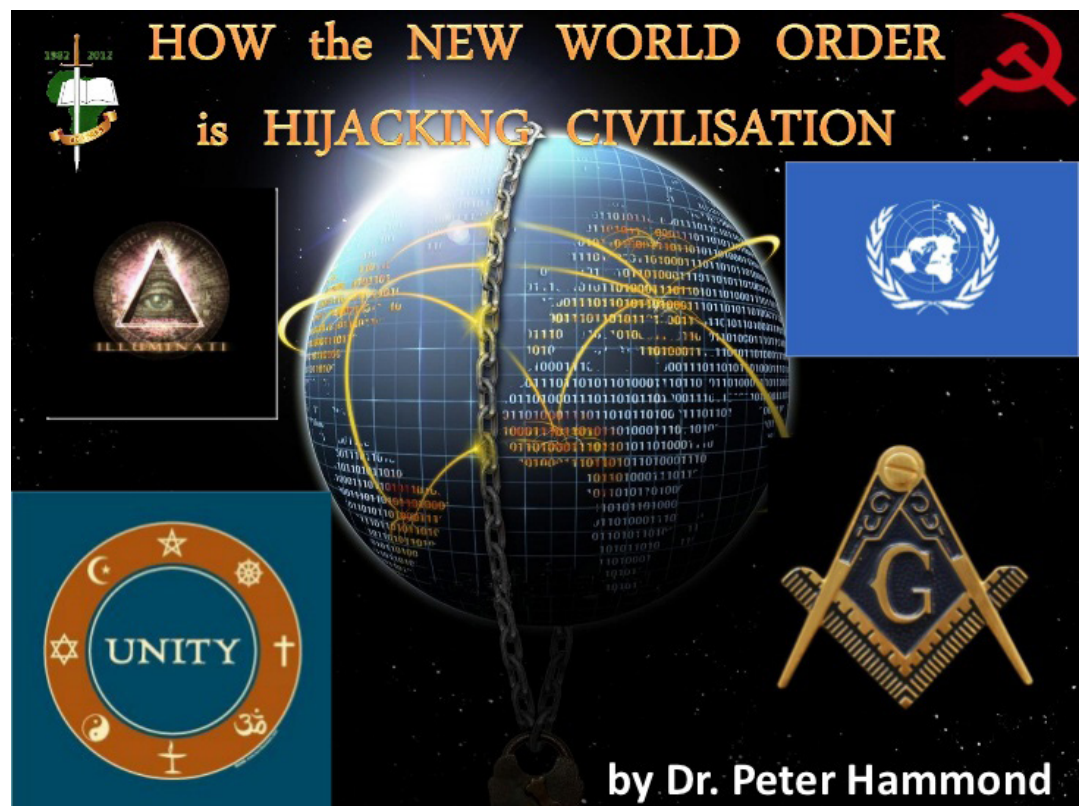
*“All the ends of the world shall remember and turn to the Lord and all the families of the nations shall worship before You. For the Kingdom is the Lord's and He rules over the nations. All ...shall bow before Him... a posterity shall serve Him. It will be recounted of the Lord to the next generation. They will come and declare His righteousness, to people who will yet be born, that He has done this.”* Psalm 22:27-31

**The Greatest Century of Missions**

The 19<sup>th</sup> century was the greatest century of Missionary advance. It was a century of astounding inventions and of spectacular advances in technology. Many countries experienced dramatic spiritual Revivals. Christian missionaries won whole tribes and nations to Christ, in the remotest regions of the globe.

**To the Ends of the Earth**

Christianity came to the beginning of the 20<sup>th</sup> century on a rising and apparently unstoppable tide. Christianity was gaining spectacular momentum as missionaries from Europe were Evangelising and discipling virtually every tribe and nation. The Protestant Faith had far outstripped the Catholic and Orthodox branches in missionary activity, vitality and initiative. The Protestant Faith had become the dominant Faith of the most productive, powerful and prosperous nations in both the Northern and Southern hemispheres. Amidst irrepressible optimism, many were openly speaking of the beginning of the Biblical Millennium on earth.

**Retreat from Victory**

At the first World Missions Conference in Edinburgh in 1910, delegates were anticipating the completion of the Great Commission within their generation. No one in 1910 would have anticipated the wholesale abandonment of entire nations to communism, false religions and heathenism. Nor would anyone have predicted that the church would retreat from victory to such an extent that they would be questioning the existence of the devil, or hell, or reinterpreting marriage to include what God, in the Bible, describes as perversion and an abomination.

## **World War**

The Christian era of bold missionary expansion came to an abrupt halt as the guns of August 1914 erupted. The great European countries, which have been the heartland of Christendom, and the source of most of the world's missionaries devastated each others economies and annihilated millions of one another's young men, in what has to be recognised at the most tragic and senseless conflict in history.

## **Sinister Manipulation**

The sinister bankers who pulled the strings behind the scenes and engineered the auto genocide of Europe, were also the ones who owned many of the companies that made the machine guns, bullets, bombs, shells and artillery, that destroyed the cream of Europe. There are numerous studies that have shown the role of Freemason bankers and politicians such as Lord Nathan Rothschild, whose goal was to bring down Christian civilisation. Nothing could have stopped the positive onward march of Christianity world wide, except that Christians were persuaded to kill one another so enthusiastically, and so efficiently, in the First World War.

## **Secularisation and Revolution**

Even more devastating than the actual numbers of people killed, crippled, or severely injured, was the damage to the spiritual life of Europe. The secularisation of Europe and the breakdown of moral standards, coincided with the great resurgence of Revolutionary fervour and Marxist Communism, which filled the vacuum left by the collapse of the Russian, German and Austrian Empires.

## **The Worst Century of Persecution**

If the 19<sup>th</sup> century was the greatest century of Missionary advance, the 20<sup>th</sup> century proved to be the worst century of persecution in history. More Christians were martyred for their faith in the 20<sup>th</sup> century than in all the previous 19 centuries combined. Looking back over the last 100 years, one can discern how secular humanists have systematically hijacked Christian civilisation.

## **Infiltration and Subversion**

Marxists have targeted 5 major culture-shaping institutions for infiltration: educational institutions; the entertainment industry; the news media; religious institutions; and political institutions.

## **The Battle for the Mind**

Marxist revolutionaries, secular humanists, atheists and evolutionists have so thoroughly infiltrated most of the universities of Europe and North America, that today God is not only banished from the curriculum, but Christianity and its contributions to civilisation are marginalised, ignored, or vilified. Even scientists advocating Intelligent Design are mercilessly hounded from institutions of higher learning. Instead of education, teaching people how to think, we now mostly have indoctrination, telling students what to think.

## **Rearranging Reality**

Anti-Christian secular humanists have dominated the entertainment industry over the last century, subverting families and undermining morality at every turn. Particularly insidious has been the spate of "This is a true story", or "Based on a true story", or "Inspired by true events" rewriting of history and distorting of reality.

## **The First Battlefield**

As Karl Marx declared: *"The first battlefield is the rewriting of history"*. Marx's disciples have been very busy, through both the educational institutions and in the entertainment industry, in re-writing history.

## **Corrupt and Conquer**

The news media has also come to be overwhelming dominated by secular humanist prejudice against Christianity. The secular humanist mass media has been consistently ignoring the relentless anti-Christian persecution by communist and Muslim governments. Through selective focus and distortion of reality, the mass media has effectively brainwashed generations of Christians to vote for those who hate Christian values, and to idolise those who are the intractable enemies of the Faith.

## **Confuse, Divide and Conquer**

Most of the mainline denominations have been infiltrated by secular humanists, called liberal theologians, who have gutted the churches of the Biblical Gospel and produced generations of spineless evangelicallyfish. Many churches are filled with pseudo-saved, semi-saved, half-saved, un-saved pew warmers who have never been truly converted, nor have they come into any real relationship with our Lord Jesus Christ.



## **National Suicide**

As a result of the successful infiltration by secular humanists of education institutions, the entertainment industry, the news media and religious institutions, control over political institutions has been inevitable. Those who argue for the good of their nation are shouted down and vilified as dangers to society. Most nations now seemed, to be governed by political parties determined to commit national suicide and sell out their nations' sovereignty to internationalists.

## **The United Nations**

The hostility of the United Nations to everything Christian is obvious by their consistent support for nations which persecute the Church and failure to effectively address the targeting of Christian minorities. The disgraceful track record of the United Nations, when they have militarily intervened in nations, reveals their true nature. The United Nations mission to the Congo, the invasion of Katanga and forcing that stable, pro-Western state to re-join the communist chaos of the Congo, the atrocities perpetrated against Christian civilians by UN forces in the Congo, are well documented in **The Fearful Master**.

## **Treachery in Rwanda**

The United Nations complicity in disarming the general population in Rwanda, enabled the Rwandan holocaust of April/May 1994. More people were killed by machetes in 6 weeks in Rwanda, than have died from nuclear weapons in all of history. The United Nations forces stood by and failed to save lives. As Holocaust in Rwanda and the British film "Shooting Dogs" documents, the United Nations actually handed over thousands of Christian refugees who had fled to them for protection into the hands of the Interhambwe mass-murderers who slaughtered them.

## **Human Trafficking**

The United Nations involvement in human trafficking, has also been well documented and is dramatized in the book and film *The Whistleblower* based on policewoman Kathryn Bolkovac's experiences in Bosnia.

## **Globalism**

The three main pillars of the New World Order that the global elite want to bring about are: A One World Economy, a One World Government and a One World Religion. Their shorthand to describe all this is: Globalism.

## **One World Religion**

As the United Nations is working for a one-world government, so the World Council of Churches is working for a one-world religion. The World Council of Churches and its local member bodies, such as the National Council of Churches in America, and the South African Council of Churches in South Africa, promote interfaith conferences and urge us to focus on our "shared religious traditions." This interfaith movement is being promoted by Non-Governmental Organisations, charity foundations, and prominent politicians worldwide.

## **WCC**

The WCC claims to represent 349 churches, denominations and church fellowships, in more than 110 countries and territories around the world, representing over 560 million Christians. WCC members include most of the world's Orthodox churches, Anglicans, Methodists, Lutherans, Presbyterians and some Baptist, United and Independent churches. Most, though not all, WCC members tend to be very liberal theologically and are experiencing dramatic decline in church attendance. Many of the people they claim as members have been concerted and left the WCC affiliates to join Evangelical churches.

## **Qur'an in Church**

One high profile event that epitomises this move towards a One World Religion, is when on 26 June 2011, the National Cathedral in Washington DC, and approximately 50 other churches in the US, publically read from the Qur'an during their Sunday worship services. This is under the theme of: "Faith shared: Uniting in Prayer and Understanding."

## **Interfaith Worship**

Nor is this promotion of interfaith worship limited to liberal Theologians of the National Council of Churches. Prominent Evangelical leaders Rick Warren, Brian McLaren, Bill Hybels and Robert Schuller signed a letter to the Islamic community, entitled "Loving God and Neighbour Together". This letter claimed that Christians consider Allah and the Christian God to be the same! Brian McLaren, a key leader in the Emerging church movement actually has celebrated Ramadan.

### **Treason From Within**

The Roman leader Cicero, in 42BC, wrote: *“A nation can survive its fools, and even the ambitious. But it cannot survive treason from within. An enemy at the gates is less formidable, for he is known and he carries his banners openly. But the traitor moves among those within the gate freely, his sly whispers rustling through all the alleys, heard in the very halls of government itself. For the traitor appears not traitor, he speaks in the accents familiar to his victims and he wears their face and their garments, and he appeals to the baseness that lies deep in the hearts of all men. He rots the soul of a nation, he works secretly and unknown in the night, to undermine the pillars of a city, he infects the body politic so that it can no longer resist. A murder is less to be feared.”*

### **Brave New World**

Aldous Huxley in 1932, published *The Brave New World*. This book describes as future state of human slavery where people live carefree lives in a technologically advanced society, subdued by drugs and bombarded with endless stimulations and distractions. The 20<sup>th</sup> century idols of atheism, humanism and communism have now become mainstream.

### **Towards a New World Order**

The first attempt to establish a New World Order was by the people who came to the land of Shinar (present day Iraq) and built the Tower of Babel (Genesis 11). Others have tried since: Nebuchadnezzar with his Babylonian Empire, Alexander the Great with his Greek/Macedonian Empire, The Roman Empire, Genghis Khan and the Mongols, Napoleon and the Communist International. George Bush senior and Soviet President, Mikhail Gorbachev, repeatedly spoke of a New World Order in the early 90s. US President, Bill Clinton, regularly spoke of the New World Order as being of the highest priority on the International Agenda.

### **The Right Crisis**

In a statement to the United Nations Business Council in September 1994, David Rockefeller said: *“We are on the verge of a global transformation. All we need is the right major crisis and the nations will accept the New World Order.”*

### **Extortion**

Henry Ford declared: *“It is well the people of the nation do not understand our banking and monetary system, for if they did, I believe there would be a revolution before tomorrow morning.”*

### **Tragedy and Hope**

Carroll Quigley wrote in his massive book *Tragedy and Hope* (published by McMillan in 1966) *“Their aim is nothing less than to create a world system of financial control in private hands able to dominate the political system of each country and the economy of the world as a whole. The system was to be controlled in a feudalistic fashion by the central banks of the world, acting in concert, by a secret agreement arrived at in frequent private meetings and conferences.”*

### **The Manipulators**

Major players in working to bring about this New World Order include the Trilateral Commission, also known as the Council of Foreign Relations and the Bilderbergers. These groups work behind the scenes, but there more prominent tools are the United Nations and the World Council of Churches.

### **Constructive Chaos**

The New World Order has used wars, economic depressions and recessions and population control to undermine Western civilisation and bring about their Globalist Agenda.

### **Demographic Engineering**

Through aggressive population control tactics, promoting birth control, abortion, sterilisations and massive propaganda of *“Overpopulation”* the globalist aim to dramatically bring down the population of Europeans and Americans. Then, by betraying stable governments in Africa, Asia and South America, and bringing about economic collapse, a vast movement of refugee populations has been stimulated into Europe, North America, South Africa and Australia. By dramatically decreasing populations of those countries traditionally Christian and exploding the populations of mostly pagan and anti-Christian races the goal is a dramatic change in demographics and the death of the West.



## **Eurabia**

The sharp decline of the birth rate of Europeans and the massive influx of Muslim immigrants into Europe, for example, is hoped to bring about a transformation of Europe into Eurabia. The goal in all of this is a world population more amenable to manipulation and control by the Globalists for their New World Order.

## **Population Control**

From America being a mostly Protestant Christian nation of people from a European background, the promotion of population control methods to suppress the growth of the white Americans and stimulating a huge influx of immigrants from Third World nations will soon bring America to the position where the demographics of America are radically altered.

## **Neutralising the Church**

To distract and neutralise the Christian Church, false doctrines and heresies have been vigorously promoted. Pacifism has been promoted and a rapture fever obsession with end times prophecies has greatly distracted many Christians.

## **Defeatism and Escapism**

Antinomianism has gutted the Church of the Law of the Lord which is perfect, which converts the soul. Defeatism and escapism have neutralised many Churches. Worldly music, age segregated services, youth groups which entertain rather than educate, have further undermined the Christian resistance to the New World Order.

## **Derailing the Church**

Discernment is plainly at a low ebb in the average Western church. Sensationalism, materialism, idolatrous elevating of high profile tele-evangelists and faith healers have side-tracked many believers from fulfilling the Great Commission.

## **Hijacking Education**

Most Christians barely notice that secular humanists have hijacked the schools and have continued to send their children to, what are effectively, anti-Christian brainwashing institutions. Theological seminaries have generally been infiltrated by liberal Theologians and those who hold to Theistic Evolution. The resulting undermining of Biblical Christianity throughout many denominations is analogous to a cancer working its way through, what used to be, a healthy body.

## **Removing Obstacles to the New World Order**

The New World Order worked hard at destroying those states that attempted to uphold Christian values. Hence the extraordinary international campaigns against Rhodesia and South Africa in the 60s, 70s and 80s.

## **Destroying the Middle Class**

The destruction of much of the middle class through financial crises such as the triggered by the banks selling worthless derivatives which caused the 2008 economic collapse, cost tens-of-millions of people their jobs, their savings and their homes.

## **How Can We Resist the New World Order?**

First, we need to know our enemy.

*“My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge...”* Hosea 4:6

**We need to** recognise their tactics.

*“Another generation grew up, who knew neither the Lord, nor what He had done...”* Judges 2:10

## **Wide Gates to Hell**

German Reformer, Dr. Martin Luther, warned: *“I am much afraid that schools will prove to be wide gates to hell, unless they diligently labour in explaining the Holy Scriptures, engraving them in the hearts of youth. I advise no one to place his child where the Scriptures do not reign paramount. Every institution in which men are not constantly occupied with the Word of God must become corrupt.”*

*“The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom.”* Psalm 111:10

You cannot trust any government state with the moulding of the minds of future voters. God commanded His people: *“Learn not the way of the heathen.”* Jeremiah 10:2

The control of education should be in the hands of parents and the content of education must be Bible-based. Children do not belong to the state. Children are made in the image of God and are entrusted to parents to: ***“Bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.”*** Ephesians 6:4

### **Christian Education**

All parents must become involved in the Parents Teacher Associations of their local school and take an active role in their education of their young, according to Biblical principles. Christian schools should be supported. Home schooling should be prayerfully considered by those parents who have the means to do so.

### **The Battle for the Family**

Christians should have large families and ensure that they are brought up in the love and the fear of the Lord. Teaching is an integral part of the Great Commission and therefore an indispensable part of our Mission. Christian parents and church leaders must give high priority to the establishment and supporting of Christian schools and home schooling.

***“We will not hide them from their children; we will tell the next generation the praiseworthy deeds of the Lord... He commanded our forefathers to teach their children... and they in turn would tell their children. Then they would put their trust in God.”*** Psalm 78:4-7

### **The Great Commission**

We must never allow any distractions to deter us from obeying Christ’s Great Commission. Our purpose on earth is to: ***“Make disciples... teaching obedience”*** Matthew 28:19-20. The lifeblood of the Church is its Evangelistic zeal. No matter what the situation, or how adverse the circumstances may seem to be, our Lord commands us to: ***“Preach the Word; be prepared in season and out of season; correct, rebuke and encourage – with great patience and careful instruction.”*** 2 Timothy 4:2

### **Vision**

***“Where there is no vision a people perish...”*** Proverbs 29:18. Our people need a positive and practical vision from the Word of God for our personal lives, for our churches, for our nations and for the world.

### **Symptoms**

We need to squarely face the great moral challenges of our day, including the symptoms of our moral sickness: deception in the news media, degenerate entertainment, dishonesty in business, decadence in government...

### **Recognise the Root Causes**

What is even more important is that we recognise the root causes: ineffective churches, insipid preaching, irresponsible leaders, a rejection of God’s Law as the foundation for our families, churches and nation, neglect of the Bible, prayerlessness, selfishness, confusion, compromise, cowardice and, at the very core, a lack of wholehearted love for God.



### **Issue Evasion**

If our churches are motivated primarily by growth in members, finance, buildings and community prestige then issue evasion, a policy of non-confrontation and compromise is inevitable. Building our own empire does not allow for serving the Kingdom of God.



## **What Do You Stand For?**

In the demands for greater and more spectacular crusades, churches have concentrated on how to get converts - not on what they are supposed to be converted for.

This is because escapism sells better than service.

Forgiveness attracts more members than teaching obedience.

Blessings are far more popular than sacrifice.

Many churches primarily stand for escape and entertainment, offering forgiveness to those who neither want to obey, nor serve.

Churches which are obsessed with growth cannot afford to upset the peace and affluence of their members, or prospective members.

## **Choose This Day**

For many it is a choice between:

Popularity or **Principle**,

Prestige or **Persecution**,

Prosperity or **Powerful Christianity**,

Sensationalism or **Spirituality**,

Success or **Sacrifice**,

Serving man or **Serving God**,

Church growth or **Church depth**,

Respectability before man or **Revival from God**.

## **Compromise**

The result is that all too many churches are entertaining their members, rather than educating them with expository preaching from God's Word. They are comforting their members instead of challenging them in confronting sin. Many prefer revelry to preaching Repentance.



*“Righteousness and justice are the foundation of Your Throne; love and faithfulness go before You.”* Psalm 89:14

### **Priorities**

We must give our highest priority to loving, worshiping, serving, obeying and honouring God. We need a Biblical vision of righteousness, justice, love and compassion. *“The Lord loves righteousness and justice...”* Psalm 33:5

*“Hate evil, love good; maintain justice in the courts.”* Amos 5:15

*“Clothe yourselves with compassion.”* Colossians 3:12

*“Whatever you did for one of the least of these brothers of mine, you did it for Me.”* Matthew 25:40

### **A Positive Programme**

We need to promote a renewed vision, revitalised leadership, a restored nation, through returning to God in Repentance, rediscovering the Biblical Agenda, rebuilding the walls of our society, resisting the demands for cultural suicide, resolutely working for Reformation and praying for Revival.

### **Support Christian Media**

We must support Christian alternatives to the secular humanist dominated media: Subscribe to [JOY!](#) and [JUIG!](#) Magazines and [Christian Action](#). Become a local distributor for these magazines in your church.

*“And we urge you, brothers, warn those who are idle, encourage the timid, help the weak, be patient with everyone.”* 1 Thessalonians 5:15

### **Be Informed**

Get on the mailing lists and e-mailing lists of Missions and ministries working for Reformation and Revival. Support [KwaSizabantu Mission](#), [Frontline Fellowship](#), [Way of the Master](#), [The Reformation Society](#), [Christian Action](#) and [Evangelism Explosion](#).

### **Renew Minds and Change Communities**

Attend, or organise, a local Biblical Worldview Seminar to teach your people how to be effective in winning the cultural war, the battle for the family, and the battle for the mind. Praise God for ministries such as, [Answers in Genesis](#) and the [Creation Museum](#), which are providing Biblical and scientific answers for a skeptical and increasingly secular world.

*“Love your neighbour as yourself... go and do likewise.”* Luke 10:27-37

### **Resources for Reformation**

Visit the [www.christianlibertybooks.co.za](http://www.christianlibertybooks.co.za) website and obtain more powerful, effective, Biblically faithful books, DVDs and audio-visual materials for you and your family. Set up a book table at your local church to make these resources more widely available to those in your community.

*“But thanks be to God! He gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my dear brothers, stand firm. Let nothing move you. Always give yourselves fully to the work of the Lord, because you know that your labour in the Lord is not in vain.”* 1 Corinthians 15:57-58

### **Social Media**

Get on the e-mailing lists of Christian Action, Frontline Fellowship, Christians for Truth and The Reformation Society. Use social media to expose and oppose the New World Order and work to fulfil the Great Commission. Both Frontline Fellowship and Christian Action have Facebook, slideshare, YouTube clips and websites with great resources that you can access, link to, like and share with those on your social media network.

*“In the time of those kings, the God of Heaven will set up a Kingdom that will never be destroyed, nor will it be left to another people. It will crush all those kingdoms and bring them to an end. But will itself endure forever.”* Daniel 2:44

*“All the ends of the earth will remember and turn to the Lord, and all the nations will bow down before Him, for our dominion belongs to the Lord and He rules over the nations.”* Psalm 22:27-28

Dr. Peter Hammond



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org



## Chapter 28

**RESISTING BABYLON and The BEAST**

*“Should you help the wicked and love those who hate the Lord? Therefore the wrath of the Lord is upon you.”*

2 Chronicles 19:2

**New World Order**

The first attempt to establish a New World Order was by the people who came to the land of Shinar (present day Iraq) and built the Tower of Babel (Genesis 11:2-4). Others have tried since. Revelation 13 describes a beast with many heads and horns. The dragon gave the beast power, a throne and great authority. The beast mouthed blasphemies against God, blaspheming His Name, His Tabernacle, and those who dwell in Heaven. The beast made war with the saints and gained authority over *“every tribe, tongue and nation.”*

*“All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.”* Revelation 13:8

**Global Deception**

The beast will kill and capture the people of God. There will also be another beast, with a religious function who will also have worldwide authority and *“causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast... he deceived those who dwell on the earth...”* Revelation 13:11-14. This Scripture makes clear that this devilish power will work to bring about a One World government, a One World religion, and a One World economic system. Those who refuse to follow this One World religion will be persecuted and killed (Revelation 13:15).

*“He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand, or on their foreheads, and that no one may buy or sell, except one who the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: his number is 666.”* Revelation 13:16-18

Throughout the years there have been many interpretations and applications of these verses. The important thing is for us to see the big picture. The Word of God is warning us of a devilish system that will seek to impose a One World government, a One World religion, and a One World economic system. It will be further identified by its blasphemies and hostility towards God and His Name. As well as by its hostility towards believers of the past, those who are in Heaven now.

**Marks of the Beast**

We can certainly see that the world is dominated today by many forces working towards a One World government, a One World interfaith religious system and a unified economic system. Hollywood is spewing out a vast amount of blasphemies in a great variety of films. There is also an abundance of films which seek to rearrange reality and rewrite history, by slandering great Christians of the past.

**Sinister Forces**

The United Nations is the most visible attempt to create a One World government. Behind it one can discern the manipulations of the Council on Foreign Relations, the Freemasons, the Bilderbergers, the Rothschilds, and the Illuminati. Working parallel to the United Nations one can see the World Council of Churches working for a One World religion. The interfaith movement is being promoted aggressively by non-governmental organisations, charity foundations, prominent politicians worldwide and by the WCC.

*“Do not be deceived: evil company corrupts good character.”* 1 Corinthians 15:33

## Idolatry Command

When the king of Babylon, Nebuchadnezzar, attempted to achieve world domination and impose an idolatrous religion on all his subjects, Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego stood firm. On the plain of Dura, a massive statue of gold, 90 feet high, was set up and it was commanded that all peoples, nations and languages fall down and worship the golden image set up by Nebuchadnezzar. *“And whoever does not fall down and worship shall be cast immediately into the midsts of a burning, fiery furnace.”*

So we read that: *“When all the people heard the sound of the horn, flute, harp and lyre, in symphony with all kinds of music, all the people, nations and languages fell down and worshipped the gold image which King Nebuchadnezzar had set up.”* Daniel 3:7

But Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego stood up straight and would not prostrate themselves before this idol. *“Then Nebuchadnezzar, in rage and fury, gave the command to bring Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego... ‘is it true... that you do not serve my gods, or worship the gold image which I have set up? ...If you do not worship, you shall be cast immediately into the midst of a burning fiery furnace and whom is the God who will deliver you from my hand?’”* Daniel 3:13-15

## We Will Not Bow

The answer of Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego was simple and straightforward: ***“Our God, whom we serve is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and He will deliver us from your hand, O king. But if not, let it be known to you, O king, that we do not serve your gods nor will we worship the gold image which you have set up!”*** Daniel 3:17-18

The three courageous young men were bound hand and foot and cast into the midst of the fiery furnace. The men who cast them into the flames were incinerated by the intensity of the blaze. Yet, Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego walked unharmed in the midst of the flames and Nebuchadnezzar saw a fourth person with them *“like the Son of God!”* Daniel 3:21-25

The king ordered them out: *“‘Servants of the most High God, come out and come here!’ And the satraps, administrators, governors, and the king’s counsellors gathered together, and they saw these men on whose bodies the fire had no power; the hair of their head was not singed, nor were their garments affected, and the smell of fire was not on them. Nebuchadnezzar spoke, saying: ‘Blessed be the God of Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego, who sent His angel and delivered His servants who trusted in Him and they have frustrated the king’s word, and yielded their bodies that they should not serve, nor worship, any god except their own God... **there is no other God who can deliver like this!**’”* Daniel 3:26-29

## Roman Edict

Throughout history there have been others who have attempted to impose their political and religious rule on the world. Caesar Nero of Rome commanded everyone in the empire to worship him. They were to place the ashes of the incense they had burned before his image on their forehead before they were allowed to trade in the market places.



## Muhammad’s Rule

Muhammad, the founder of Islam attempted to impose his religious and political system on all. Men were not permitted to trade in the market place until they had bowed to Mecca. Many would leave some dust on their forehead to indicate that they had performed their Muslim duty. The Hadith records an incident where Muhammad challenged an old man whether he had bowed in prayer that day. The man bent down picked up some dust and rubbed it on his forehead, by way of a joke, mimicking the practise of so many others in Arabia at that time. Yet the Hadith records that Muhammad did not appreciate his sense of humour and ordered this man to be executed.

## Revolution

During the French Revolution there was an attempt to impose a blasphemous secular humanist religion on all. The Soviet Union also attempted to eradicate all expressions of Christianity. Over 48,000 churches were confiscated, demolished, or destroyed, under the



dictatorship of Lenin and Stalin. Tens-of-millions of Christians were slaughtered in the territories controlled by the Soviet Union to consolidate political control and enforce religious conformity to the will of the state.

### **Satanic Strategy**

All of these are examples of how satan works. From Babel to Babylon, from Rome to the French Revolution and from the Soviet Union to Red China, those who seek to impose a One World government and a One World religion, also seek to control the economy and they pour out blasphemies against God and His people, persecuting those who refuse to bow to their political and religious will. They make war on the saints and attempt to stamp their mark on all that they have power over.

### **The Mark**

Many people have focussed on how the mark would be placed on the right hand, or on the forehead, perhaps by a tattoo, or more recently, as the technology has become available, by a microchip. These methods may be possible, but the emphasis in the Scripture is on our way of thinking and our actions. We are commanded in the Word of God to bind His Law on our hands and on our foreheads. This surely is speaking about having our way of thinking governed by the Word of God and having our actions governed by the Word of God (Deuteronomy 6:5-8). Many people have the mark of the beast on them, without any tattoo or microchip. When one allows one's way of thinking to be conformed to the world and one's actions to be in conformity to what satan wants, then we have the mark.

*“You shall not follow a crowd to do evil.”* Exodus 23:2

### **Resisting Indoctrination**

During a Mission to Albania, I encountered an example of how resilient believers resisted the beast. When I was working in Durres, each day I would walk down the hill, past the coliseum where Titus was martyred. A kind Albanian man would greet me each day with an ice-cream. One day I asked him why he was giving me an ice-cream. He said: *“You are from South Africa, you have a very good country!”*

The next day I asked him why he thought that South Africans had a great country, and he said: *“Because our newspapers were filled with articles attacking you year after year.”* I was a little puzzled, so he explained: *“The communists controlled the media in Albania. We were a one party dictatorship. So, we knew whatever the media said were lies. So if the communist hated you, God must have a great plan for your land!”*

I was impressed at his refusal to be brainwashed by propaganda. Whatever the state media told him, he took a 180° position from it and found that to be a very accurate rule of thumb. The truth is the exact opposite of what the communist controlled media said it was!

### **We Are Christians!**

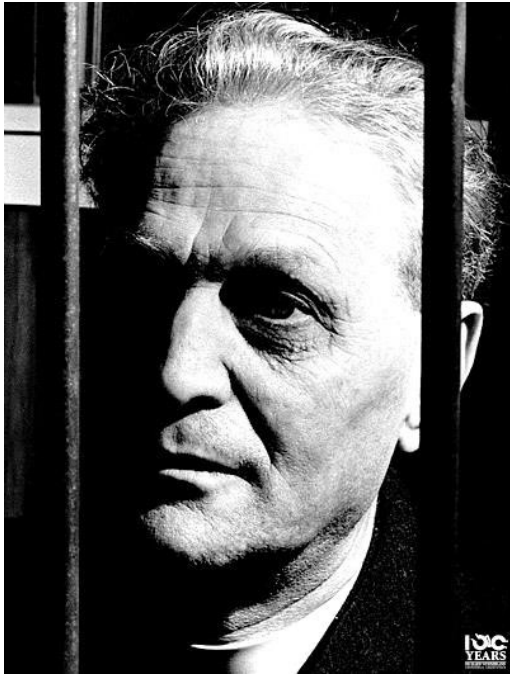
One day I asked this man how he came to make ice-cream? The man became very animated. He explained: *“My father made the best ice-cream in Albania! When the communists took over this country he called my brothers and I together. He explained: ‘This communist scum is going to destroy this country. We must dismantle our machinery and bury it before they come and confiscate it. But before we do, I want you to learn again how to assemble this later when the communists are overthrown.’ Then he told us with great intensity: ‘Sons, never forget: We are Christians! We are capitalists! We hate communism! And we make the best ice-cream in Albania!’”* Here this man was, over 45 years later, honouring his father as a Christian capitalist making the best ice-cream in Albania!

*“Blessed is the man who walks not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor stands in the path of sinners, nor sits in the seat of the scornful; but his delight is in the Law of the Lord, and in his Law he meditates day and night. He shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that brings forth its fruit in season, whose leaf also shall not wither and whatever he does shall prosper.”* Psalm 1:1-3

### **Confronting Compromise and Cowardice**

When the communists took over Romania they bullied and intimidated the church leaders to line up and come onto the platform to endorse communism. One after the other, ministers stood up to proclaim that communism was actually *Christianity in practise* and all Christians should support the Communist Party of Romania.

A young Lutheran minister, Richard Wurmbrand, walked up to the podium and quoted this passage of Scripture from 2 Corinthians 6:14-18: *“Do not be unequally yoked together with unbelievers. For what fellowship has righteousness with lawlessness? And what communion has light with darkness? And what accord has Christ with Belial? What part has a believer with an unbeliever? And what agreement has the Temple of God with*



*idols? For you are the temple of the Living God. As God has said, 'I will dwell in them and walk among them. I will be their God and they shall be My people. Therefore come out from among them and be separate', says the Lord, 'Do not touch what is unclean and I will receive you. I will be a Father to you, and you shall be My sons and daughters', says the Lord Almighty.*"

Richard Wurmbrand reported that he ended up in jail very quickly after that. Then he added, all the other ministers who had compromised and lied and twisted the Scriptures in order to please their communist masters ended up in the same prison cells, just a little bit later. However, Richard Wurmbrand observed, the difference was that he was there with a clear conscience. Their consciences were tortured by their cowardice and compromise.

*"Therefore do not be partakers with them."* Ephesians 5:7

### Resistance

To resist the New World Order we need to fear God, refuse to be conformed to the world, and have our minds renewed daily by the Word

of God. We need to devote our lives to obeying the Cultural Mandate and the Great Commission. As the Apostle Peter declared: *"We must obey God rather than men!"* (Acts 5:29).

*"The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom."* Psalm 111:10

### Daniel's Vision

Daniel had a vision of all the kingdoms of the world: the head of gold, the chest of silver, the stomach of bronze, the legs of iron, and the feet of iron and clay. *"And in the days of these kings the God of Heaven will set up a Kingdom which shall never be destroyed; and the Kingdom shall not be left to another people; it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms and shall stand forever."* Daniel 2:44



Daniel described a stone that smashed into pieces the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver and the gold and how that stone would grow to become a mountain that would fill the whole earth. The Kingdom of God will destroy and replace all these human attempts to create a

New World Order. Those who promote a One World religion and a One World government are doomed to defeat and disgrace. Those who faithfully serve the King of kings and the Lord of lords will be vindicated.

*"But thanks be to God! He gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my dear brothers, stand firm. Let nothing move you. Always give yourselves fully to the work of the Lord, because you know that your labour in the Lord is not in vain."* 1 Corinthians 15:57-58





## Chapter 29

**HOLLYWOOD, HUMANISM and HISTORY**

Films have become a major culture shaping force in society. To many people history and reality itself is defined by what they see at the movies. This has become extremely dangerous as many of the filmmakers are secular humanists with an axe to grind against Christianity. As Karl Marx declared: “*The first battlefield is the re-writing of history.*”

**Robin Hood and Richard the Lion Heart**

Director Ridley Scott’s new film on *Robin Hood* dramatically distorts reality by trashing the character of one of history’s most beloved Christian heroes, King Richard the Lion Heart. According to Ridley Scott’s new blockbuster epic, King Richard was a repugnant individual with no moral standards. In Ridley Scott’s version of *Robin Hood*, King Richard is guilty of looting, murder and even massacres.

**Kingdom of Heaven**

In this character assassination Ridley Scott is being consistent with his previous blockbuster epic: “*Kingdom of Heaven*” which presented one of the worst distortions of history ever seen on any screen in recent years. Focusing on the fall of Jerusalem, in AD1187, to Saladin’s Muslim armies, this anti-Christian, politically correct revisionism gets everything wrong.

Scott’s *Kingdom of Heaven* has its geography very wrong. Jerusalem is placed in the middle of the Sahara Desert without a tree, bush, or a blade of grass. The Mount of Olives, the Kidron Valley and the Valley of Hinnon are nowhere to be seen.

**Inverting Reality**

*Kingdom of Heaven* distorted history beyond all recognition. The Knights Templar who were actually formed to protect travellers from Muslim bandits were transformed in Scott’s imaginative film to reprehensible religious fanatics, trying to shatter ‘the truce’ and provoke war with the peace-loving Muslims by attacking caravans. In Scott’s *Kingdom of Heaven* it is not the Muslims who teach that “it is no sin to kill an infidel”, it is the pathway to Paradise, but the Christians! According to Scott it is not the Muslims who require extra taxes (*Jizya*) of the Christians, but the Christians who required the Muslims to pay taxes in order to be allowed to pray!

**Distorting History**

Although Scott portrays the Muslim leader Saladin as a magnanimous, gracious, generous and merciful leader, in fact Saladin initiated the war, declaring *Jihad* against the Christians, attacking more than 50 crusader castles in two years. At the battle of Hattin on 4 July 1187, which actually took place on the shores of Lake Tiberius, but in Scott’s film a waterless desert, Saladin actually had all the Christian prisoners beheaded in cold blood. Not that that is shown in Scott’s *Kingdom of Heaven*.

**An Insult to Intelligence**

Quite aside from factual errors in geography, the attributing of Islamic doctrine to Christians, and blatant distortion of history, *Kingdom of Heaven* is an insult to the intelligence of its viewers in terms of its preposterous script, such as armour that does not sink in a storm, and a blacksmith who knows more about cavalry tactics and siege warfare than the military professionals.

**An Agnostic Agenda**

Ridley Scott went on record as declaring that he was an agnostic. His hostility for Christianity and infatuation with Islamic *Jihadists* is somehow also squeezed into the plot of *Robin Hood*.

**False Witness**

It is completely false to accuse King Richard of having slaughtered Muslim women and children! King Richard was known as The Lion Hearted in his lifetime. He has been respected since the 12th century, not only in Europe, but by his Muslim enemies as well. It is Richard the Lion Heart’s crusader flag, the St. Georges Cross, that was adopted as the national flag of England. A statue of King Richard is one of only two statues within the grounds of the Palace of Westminster, outside the Houses of Commons and the House of Lords in London.

## Slander

Yet, Ridley Scott would have us believe that this most exemplary and highly respected crusader, whose courage and chivalry was legendary in his lifetime, and has continued to be so to this present day, was in fact a deceitful, murderous low-life.

The triumphant return of Richard the Lion Heart to England does not happen in this film, because he dies before being able to return to England. In fact, Richard did not die on his way back from the Third Crusade, but after retuning to England during a later battle in France.

## Rewriting History

So why do some filmmakers, such as Ridley Scott, seek to rearrange reality and rewrite history?

## The Power of the Media

There is tremendous power in art and entertainment to change lives and shape society. Through the mass communication media – newspapers, radio, films, videos and TV – ideas and values are promoted that transform culture. The media can be used to inspire great sacrifice and service. It can also influence people to commit terrible acts of cruelty and carnage.

As William Shakespeare wrote: “The pen is mightier than the sword”.

John Locke observed: “Whoever defines the word, defines the world.”

Dr. Ted Baehr has observed: “Whoever controls the media, controls the culture”.

## More Real than Reality!

To most young people films are more real than reality. Movies show you what to do, how to do it, when to do it, why to do it and how to feel about it! Children learn by teachers presenting information and behaviour, repeating that information and behaviour and rewarding the accurate feedback of the information and/or behaviour.

## The Gramsci Strategy

Italian Marxist Antonio Gramsci was a co-founder of the Italian Communist Party. Gramsci declared that to capture the Christian West one needed to “*Marxise the inner man to alter the Christian mind – to turn it into its opposite in all its details – so that it would become not merely a non-Christian mind, but an anti-Christian mind.*”

This meant getting individuals to think about life’s problems without reference to Christianity and the Laws of God. Gramsci advocated a quiet revolution: “*Everything must be done in the name of man’s dignity and rights, and in the name of his autonomy and freedom from outside restraint. From the claims and restraints of Christianity above all.*”

## Capture the Culture

Gramsci’s slogan was: “*Capture the culture!*”

## Cultural Termites

Gramsci advocated working as a termite to erode the foundations and structures, eating out the Christian heart of Western institutions.

## Political Agenda

Oliver Stone, who directed *Platoon*, *Salvador*, *JFK*, *Nixon* and *Alexander* always inserts his political bias into his movies. Similarly, actress Jane Fonda (*Agnes of God*) and Director Costa Gravras (*Betrayed* and *The Music Box*) design their films to attack Christianity and promote Atheism, or even Communism.

## The Hatred of Apostates

Martin Scorsese (Director of *The Last Temptation of Christ* and *Cape Fear*), and Paul Schrader (Scriptwriter of *The Last Temptation* and *Showgirls*), both used to be theological students. Scorsese is an apostate whose intense hatred for Christianity is vented in his vile films. But, of course, most films aren’t that blatant. Most scriptwriters, directors and actors don’t have such an obsessive anti-Christian axe to grind. Most are far more subtle, but they still have a message.

## Pocahontas

In a blatant distortion of history, Disney twisted the story of *Pocahontas* to promote new age paganism. In fact, the main reason Pocahontas is famous, is because she was the first Indian convert to Christianity to be baptised in North America. Not that anyone seeing the Disney films on *Pocahontas* would realise that.



### **Avatar**

One of the most expensive films in history, Avatar, blatantly promotes new age paganism and pantheism.

### **The Green Zone**

*The Green Zone* manages to rewrite history to make the United States government and military the villain in the Gulf war with Iraq.

### **Invictus**

*Invictus* white-washes the African National Congress (ANC), ignoring their terrorist campaign that led to power, and the corruption that has followed it. It also idolizes Nelson Mandela as a most exemplary statesman, without referring to his role in violent revolution, or in pushing through the legalisation of abortion-on-demand in South Africa. It must also be the first time in history that a president has been accredited with a sports team's victory on the field.

### **Only the Facts Have Been Changed**

Unfortunately, as most people read very little, and are generally ignorant of their history, films that claim to be a true story can deceive large sections of the population. When these films have a political agenda then the consequences can be even more serious.

### **The Media is Shaping the Culture**

As Dr. Ted Baehr of Movieguide observed after the recent American presidential elections: The media shapes the culture and the culture chooses the president.

### **Targets for Revolution**

Marxists have long taught that there are five culture carrying, and culture shaping, institutions that must be infiltrated for any revolution to succeed. These they identify as: 1. The educational institutions, 2. The news media, 3. The entertainment industry, 4. Religious institutions, 5. Political institutions.

### **Revolutionary Strategy**

Of these, of course, the educational institutions are the most foundational, as the philosophy of the schools in this generation will become the philosophy of government in the next generation. And when people's knowledge of current affairs is also dominated by secular humanists in the news media, and their entertainment industry has distorted their understanding of history and contemporary issues, then inevitably the religious and political institutions fall into the hands of those who control the media.

### **When Entertainment Becomes Exploitation**

As few people read history books and most depend entirely on Hollywood films for their understanding of the past, the potential for exploitation is enormous. *Gandhi*, *Malcolm X*, *Havana*, *The Power of One*, *Cry Freedom*, *Platoon*, *Born on the 4<sup>th</sup> of July*, *Shootdown*, and many others, are examples of selective focus, distortion and discredited falsehood dressed up as "This is a true story". Yes, only the facts have been changed to protect the guilty, and to vilify their victims.

### **The Unmentionable Omissions**

Why have major films never been made of the dramatic life stories of great Christian heroes such as Dr. David Livingstone, Henry Morton Stanley, Adoniram Judson, Ulrich Zwingli, on great events such as the Reformation, on the persecution of Christians behind the Iron Curtain and in the Soviet Gulag, or of the persecution of Christians in Red China and the Middle East?

### **Capturing Hearts and Minds**

The media elite have constructed most prominent and entertaining pulpits of celluloid and electronics to capture the hearts and minds of the audience. And they have redefined the rules of the game from a Biblical to a humanistic basis.

### **The Danger of Distortion**

The Bible has a great deal to say about our vulnerability to influence and the dangers of an incomplete portrayal of reality. Acts 19:29-34 describes a riot in Ephesus in which the rioters had no real idea of why they were rioting. They had been whipped up to hysteria by an inaccurate report. In Genesis 3 the serpent persuaded Eve to accept a version of reality that just wasn't true. But the persuasive manner in which the half-truth was presented, led Eve to make a disastrous decision. When Annanias and Saphira lied before the Church, it resulted in death (Acts 5:1-11). In the same way Gehazi's deception of Naaman brought a terrible judgment upon himself (2 Kings 5). Half truths and incomplete truths are enemies of the truth.

**So what is the solution?**

1. It is important that we know our history from a balanced and Biblical perspective. The Reformation Society has produced many audio lectures and PowerPoints on major historical events and characters. History books such as: *Slavery, Terrorism and Islam – The Historical Roots and Contemporary Threat*; *The Greatest Century of Reformation*; and *The Greatest Century of Missions* help provide an important Christian understanding of vital events in history. Visit [www.reformationSA.org](http://www.reformationSA.org). **“Have nothing to do with the fruitless deeds of darkness, but rather expose them.”** Ephesians 5:11
2. Read up on the Biblical and contemporary issues so that you can recognise deception in the media. Visit [www.movieguide.org](http://www.movieguide.org) for reviews of current films from a Christian perspective. Subscribe to Movieguide 2510-G Las Posas Road 502 Camarillo California 93010 USA. You can also access some of our own film reviews, most from a historical point of view, on and [www.christianaction.org.za](http://www.christianaction.org.za) **“See to it that no one takes you captive through hollow and deceptive philosophy, which depends on human tradition and the basic principles of this world.”** Colossians 2:8
3. Obtain video documentaries that will help you alert your family, friends and congregation to the deceptions and dangers in many films. e.g.: *Death by Entertainment*, *Learn to Discern*, *Hollywood Vs Religion*, *Hollywood be Thy Name*, etc. **“They are to teach My people the difference between the holy and the common and show them how to distinguish between the unclean and the clean.”** Ezekiel 44:23
4. Refuse to waste your time and money on immoral, anti-Christian films, but rather choose to support good quality family films that honour God such as: *Ben Hur*, *The Ten Commandments*, *The Robe*, *Chariots of Fire*, *The Prince of Egypt*, *Fireproof*, etc. **“Whatever is true, whatever is noble, whatever is right, whatever is pure, whatever is lovely, whatever is admirable – if anything is excellent or praiseworthy – think about such things.”** Philippians 4:8
5. Be selective in your viewing choices. Take control over what is filling and forming your mind. Rediscover the joy of reading great books. Set proper priorities. Relegate films and videos to a subordinate position – below exercise, hiking, worship, fellowship, evangelism and service. **“Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God’s will is – His good, pleasing and perfect will.”** Romans 12:2
6. Pray for wisdom (James 1:5) and discernment (Proverbs 3:21). Learn to think critically. Discuss the film, its characters and message in the light of the Bible. Ask: Who is the hero? Who is the villain? What is the basic message of this film? How is the family portrayed? How is the church portrayed? How is love portrayed? How true is this film to history? How is the conflict resolved in this film? What is the worldview of the film? Would you be embarrassed to sit through the film with your parents/your children/with the Lord Jesus? What would you have done differently if you were the main character in the story? **“So give your servant a discerning heart to distinguish between right and wrong ...”** 1 Kings 3:8
7. Speak up for moral, God honouring entertainment and speak out against blasphemous, degrading and exploitative productions. Write to, or phone, producers of TV programmes and scriptwriters, directors and producers of films (Movieguide regularly publishes these details with their film reviews). Be sure to praise the good as well as to protest against the bad. **“Who will rise up for Me against the wicked? Who will take a stand for Me against evildoers?”** Psalm 94:16

Get informed. Be discerning. Every time you purchase a cinema ticket, rent or buy a DVD, you are casting a vote. Be sure that you only invest in family-friendly and God-honouring films.

**“Be very careful then how you live – not as unwise, but as wise, making the most of every opportunity, because the days are evil.”** Ephesians 5:15-16





## Chapter 30

**The End of ISLAM**

By God's grace, we are living in momentous times, which could be the beginning of the end of Islam.

Muslim states are the most severe persecutors of Christians and radical Muslim extremists are the most vicious terrorists, hijackers, kidnappers, suicide bombers and assassins in the world today.

**Muslim Myths**

Yet Muslims, and their public relations agents and apologists, claim that Islam is a great religion of learning and tolerance. I have heard Muslim Imams of the Islamic Propagation Centre International declare in the mosque in Durban that Muslims are "more Jewish than the Jews and more Christian than the Christians!" All over the world, repeatedly, Muslims claim Islam to be superior to Christianity. "You Christians are so divided. We Muslims are all united. You have so many denominations, but we Muslims are all one. In Islam there is perfect unity." And "Christianity is



a religion for the Whites only, Islam is the Black man's religion.;" "There is no racism in Islam, we are all one in Islam." "You Christians have so many Bibles, and you keep changing the Bible, but we Muslims have only one Quran, and it has never been changed."

**Just the Facts**

*Slavery, Terrorism and Islam* exposes the falsehood of these and other prevalent myths propagated about Islam. Far from Islam being a great religion of learning, tolerance and peace, this book presents the historical facts, and sets the record straight. Muhammad declared that if other books confirmed what was in the Quran then they didn't need them. If the books did not confirm what was in the Quran they didn't want them. So the order was: Burn them! The Muslims burned libraries all across North Africa and the Middle East. They burned the library of Alexandria - the largest library in the world at that time. It probably included original copies of the Bible and other priceless manuscripts.

**A Trail of Destruction**

Over 3200 churches were destroyed or converted into mosques during the first century of Islamic Jihad alone. During the Muslim invasion of Syria in AD 634 thousands of Christians were massacred. As Mesopotamia was conquered between AD 635 and 643 many churches and monasteries were ransacked, and ministers and Christians slain. In the conquest of Egypt AD 640 and 641, the towns of Behnesa, Fayum, Nikiu and Aboit were all put to the sword. When the Muslims invaded Cyprus, they looted and pillaged homes and churches and massacred much of the population. In North Africa, when Tripoli was captured in AD 643, all the Jews and Christians were forced to hand their women and children over as slaves. When Carthage was captured, it was burned to the ground and most of its inhabitants slaughtered.

Beginning in AD 712 the Muslim armies invaded India. They smashed and demolished temples, plundered palaces, slaughtered millions of Indian men and enslaved the women and children. The ancient cities of Baranasai Mathura, Uggain, Maheshwar, Jwalamukhi and Dwarka were sacked, the populations massacred, and not one temple left standing.

### **“The Bloodiest Story in History”**

Will Durant in his *The Story of Civilisations*, describes the Muslim invasion of India as “probably the bloodiest story in history.” The North Western region of India is called the Hindu Kush (“the slaughter of the Hindu”) as a reminder of the vast number of Hindu slaves who died while being marched across the Afghan Mountains to the Muslim slave markets in Central Asia. The Buddhists were also targeted for destruction. In AD 1193 Muhammad Khilji burned to the ground their famous library and the Buddhist stronghold of Bihar.

Shah Jahan is remembered as the builder of the Taj Mahal. What few Westerners know is that the builder of the Taj Mahal launched 48 military campaigns against non-Muslims in just 30 years. In AD 1628 he killed all his male relatives. Shah Jahan had 5,000 concubines in his harem but also indulged in incestuous sex with his daughters. In just one town, Banares, Jahan destroyed 76 Hindu temples. He also demolished Christian churches at Agra and Lahore. When he captured Hugh, a Portuguese enclave near Calcutta, he had 10,000 inhabitants “blown up with powder, drowned in water, or burned by fire.” Another 4,000 were enslaved and offered Islam or death. Those who refused to convert were killed.

### **Spain Under the Moors**

Neither was Spain under the Muslim Moors the jewel of Islamic tolerance that it is often purported to be. In AD 920 all the inhabitants of Mueza were put to the sword. Cordova, Zaragoza and Merida were burned to the ground, with all adult males executed and all women and children enslaved. In AD 1066 all the Jews of Grenada were slaughtered. In AD 1126, all the Christians of Grenada were deported to Morocco.

In AD 1009, Kalif Hakem of Egypt ordered the destruction of the Holy Sepulchre and all Christian places of worship in Jerusalem. Christians were persecuted cruelly and pilgrims were attacked.

### **Carnage in Constantinople**

Under Mehmet II the Turks conquered the great Byzantine capital, Constantinople. On 29 May, AD 1453, waves of Turkish soldiers swept into Constantinople, the greatest city in the world at that time, and put it to the sword. Priceless libraries and irreplaceable works of art were burned, the population slaughtered, even in the Hagia Sophia, the greatest Christian church in the world at that time.

For centuries the Turks demanded an annual “blood levy” of Christian boys. Parents were forced to hand over one out of every five Christian boys for service in the Sultan’s army as janissaries.

### **The Forgotten Holocausts**

Slavery, Terrorism and Islam documents hundreds of massacres of Christian populations by Muslim rulers. For example: In 1860 over 12,000 Christians were slaughtered in Lebanon. In 1876 14,700 Bulgarians were murdered by the Turks. 200,000 Armenian Christians were slaughtered by the Turks in Bayazid in 1877. And in 1915 the Turks massacred over 1.5 million Armenian Christians. As recently as September 1922 the Turkish army destroyed the ancient city of Smyrna with its 300,000 Christian population.

### **Intolerant and Inconsistent**

Despite Islam proclaiming itself as a religion of tolerance, no Muslim countries allow freedom of religion. Despite the Saudi Arabian government funding the building of thousands of mosques in Christian lands, no church or synagogue is tolerated in Saudi Arabia. Nor can any Saudi Arabian citizen be a Christian. Despite Muhammad being called a “prophet of peace”, he engaged in 47 battles and raids on caravans in his lifetime. It is inconsistent of Islam to insist on the cutting off of the hand of a thief when Muhammad and his successors, the Caliphs, engaged in wholesale theft, raiding caravans, kidnapping hostages for ransom and looting homes.

### **Intellectual Dishonesty**

The persecution of Christians by Muslims has become a taboo subject in Western circles. Over thirteen centuries of religious discrimination and persecution, causing the suffering, oppression, murder and enslavement of countless millions has been buried under a thick whitewash of myths of “Islamic tolerance”. The deceit, cowardice and silence of all too many Western journalists and academics continues to facilitate the religious discrimination and persecutions of radical Muslims to this day.

The intellectual dishonesty of those Westerners who engage in academic gymnastics to justify the invasion of other people’s lands; the looting, pillaging, raping, murdering and enslaving of whole peoples, needs to be exposed. The hypocrisy of those who justify the military aggression of Muslims, but condemn those who inflicted defeats upon these Muslim invaders needs to be challenged. The fiction that “Jihad has never been an aggressive, but only a defensive concept”, should be dismissed with the contempt that such deception deserves. What were Saudi Arabians defending in Spain?



### **Double Talk**

When Islam defines a refusal to submit to Sharia law under Islam as aggression, and when they define peace as submission to Islam, then we must know that we are not talking the same language.

In the USA, at various airport chapels, I've noticed the increasing practice of providing prayer mats and qiblahs to indicate the direction Muslims must face to pray towards Mecca. Qurans and quantities of glossy publications printed by the Saudi Arabian Embassy to promote Islam overflow the tables at these chapels.

Even at Epcot Centre in Disney World, in their **Progress Through The Ages**, there is a section praising the religion of Islam, which "kept learning alive" during the Dark Ages! Perhaps burning libraries provided some light, but the destruction of millions of books is hardly the way to "keep learning alive!"

Numerous films from Hollywood have portrayed Christians as benighted, closed-minded bigots and the Muslim characters as compassionate, intelligent and enlightened. There has been a relentless barrage of anti-Christian bias and pro-Islamic propaganda generated by Hollywood filmmakers, liberal journalists and college professors. As Karl Marx declared: "The first battlefield is the rewriting of history!"

### **Divisions and Dissension**

Despite Muslim claims to the contrary, the unity of Muslims is more of a thin veneer than a reality. Muslims are divided into three mega blocks: The Sunni ("one of the path"), the Shi'ites (those who believe that Muhammad's son-in-law Ali was the true successor to Muhammad), and the Sufi (the mystical sect of Islam). These three main blocks can be broken down into literally thousands of identifiable groupings with major variations and distinctives.

One of the more obvious evidences of the divisions within Islam are the many wars waged between Muslims. Since the "Wars of Apostasy" (that raged during the Caliph Abu Bakr's brief rule following the death of Muhammad) to more recent years, the Muslim world has been torn by revolutions and assassinations. Just since 1948, the 21 Arab countries have suffered 30 wars, 63 successful revolutions, at least 75 unsuccessful revolutions and the murder of 36 Heads of State.

In the Arab world, revolutions and assassinations have been the most prevalent means of political expression and of attaining power. The only Arab country that was ever a democracy was Lebanon, when Christians were the majority there. However, after the Syrian invasion and intensified persecution of Christians led many to flee, and the Muslims to gain the majority, democracy in Lebanon was extinguished.

### **Changes in the Qur'an**

As to the myth that "there is only one Quran and it has never been changed", Slavery, Terrorism and Islam exposes that as falsehood as well. Both the times of prayer and the direction of prayer were changed from the original Quran. Originally Muhammad had declared that it was Allah's will that all Muslims pray towards Jerusalem. After the Jews refused to accept his "prophethood", Muhammad changed the direction of prayer from Jerusalem to Mecca.

### **Destroying Qurans**

The third Calipha Uthman forcibly standardised the many variations of the Quran by demanding that all versions and copies of the Quran had to be surrendered - under pain of death - for destruction. At the end, Uthman issued a new, revised, standardised, version of the Quran which endures to this day.

### **Many Versions**

As to there being only one version of the Quran, I have on my shelf a number of Qurans, several of which I obtained from the Islamic Propagation Centre International, including the translation and commentary by Yusuf Ali and the translation by Muhammad Pickthall. There are also the translations by Maulana Muhammad Ali, Ahmed Ali, J. M. Rodwell, A. J. Arberry, M. H. Shakir, N. J. Dawood and Muhammad Zafulla Khan. The differences between these various translations of the Quran can be quite interesting. For example the permitting of plunder in Surah 24:29: Rodwell translates it as "there shall be no harm in your entering (unoccupied) houses...for the supply of your needs"; M. Z. Khan's translation adds "wherein are your goods." Dawood inserts "to seek shelter." M. H. Shakir and M. M. Ali insert an ambiguous "wherein you have your necessities." Ahmed Ali writes "where there is some convenience for you." Whereas Arberry has a vague "wherein enjoyment is for you."

Surah 4:34 (or: 38, some versions of the Quran vary slightly as to their verse numbers), Dawood, Arberry and Rodwell translate as "as for (disobedient wives) beat them" whereas M. M. Ali and M. Z. Khan prefer a more obscure translation: "chastise them."

Some Muslim translators such as M. M. Ali tried to soften Muhammad's savagery by retranslating verses such as Surah 8:12: "Strike off their heads. Strike off their fingertips!" with "smite...their necks...and every fingertip."

Dawood translates Surah 8:68: "A prophet may not take captives until he has fought and triumphed in the land." However, Rodwell uses these words in his translation: "...until he has made a slaughter in the earth." Plainly the assertion that there is only one Quran, and the Quran has never been changed, is false.

### **Islamic Racism**

Similarly, the claim that "there is no racism in Islam, we are all one..." is a blatant lie. From the very inception of Islam, and for its entire history, Muslims have made up the largest numbers of slave traders and engaged in the greatest slave trading campaigns in history. Even today, slavery continues in many parts of the Muslim world. Just about the only places in the world today where you will still find slavery practised are in the Muslim world.

Muhammad was a slave owner, and he traded in slaves. Throughout the Hadith, Black people are referred to as slaves. In fact, in the Arabic language it is impossible to distinguish between a Black person and a slave. The same word used for a slave is the word for a Black man. In the Hadith Muhammad is quoted as referring to Black people as "raisin heads."

Several years ago when I was having a debate with Ahmed Deedat at the Islamic Propagation Centre International in Durban, Deedat tried to change the subject to get out of a sticky corner he had painted himself in to by some theological gymnastics. "Kafirs!" Deedat shouted "that's what the White Christians called the Black people when they came here to South Africa: Kafirs! That's what the Whites called the Black people: Kafirs!" For some time Deedat continued to try to shout this refrain and change the subject, injecting some kind of racial animosity in the mixed group which was listening to this debate.

So I asked him the question: "But isn't 'Kafir' an Arabic word? From the Quran? Isn't 'Kafir' the Arabic word for infidel? Wasn't it the Muslim slave traders who gave the people of Africa the term 'Kafirs?'" Ahmed Deedat promptly changed the subject and never answered the question. Nor did he revisit the issue.

### **The Islamic Slave Trade**

As Slavery, Terrorism and Islam documents, at least 28 million Africans were enslaved in the Muslim Middle East. As at least 80% of those captured by Muslim slaver raiders were calculated to have died before reaching the slave markets, it is estimated that the death toll from the 14 centuries of Muslim slave raids into Africa could have been over 112 million. When added to the number of those sold in the slave markets, the total number of African victims of the Trans Sahara and East African slave trade could be significantly higher than 140 million people.

There were many children born to slaves in the Americas, and millions of their descendants are citizens in Brazil and the USA to this day, but very few descendants of the slaves that ended up in the Middle East survive. Most of the male slaves destined for the Middle East slave bazaars were castrated and most of the children born to the women were killed at birth - in order to maintain Arab numerical supremacy.

### **Christian Roots in Africa**

As to the Muslim claim that "Christianity is a religion for the Whites only, Islam is the Black mans' religion." African Christians point out that Christianity predated Islam in Africa by 6 centuries. St. Mark, the author of the Gospel of Mark, planted the Church in Egypt, in AD 62, and died for Christ in Alexandria. The Apostle Matthew, author of Matthew's Gospel, planted the Church in Abyssinia, (present day Ethiopia). Acts chapter 8 records the baptism of the treasurer of Queen Candice of Sudan, by the deacon Phillip. From the 1st Century the Church was firmly established in Egypt, Sudan and Abyssinia. Christianity came to Africa before it even went to Europe. It was an African, Simon of Cyrene, who helped carry the cross of Christ. Some of the greatest names in early Church history were Africans, including St. Augustine of Hippo, Clement of Alexandria, Tertullian, Origen and Athanasius.

### **Africa's Agony**

However, the Muslim armies wiped out the indigenous African Church that flourished in the countries which became Libya, Tunisia, Algeria and Morocco. Through the centuries the Christians in Egypt, Sudan and Abyssinia steadfastly resisted centuries of Islamic Jihad and persecution. Far from Islam being the Black man's religion, it has been the greatest affliction the Black people have ever endured through the 14 centuries of Islamic slave trade and the oppression of Sharia law.



Today, despite Muslims being only one sixth of the world's population, Muslim armies and terrorist groups are involved in 90% of the world's conflicts.

### **Cultural Disaster**

It is no wonder that William Muir (1819 - 1905) one of the greatest orientalist of all time, concluded at the end of his long and distinguished career: "The sword of Muhammad and the Quran are the most fatal enemies of civilisation, liberty and truth which the world has ever known...an unmitigated cultural disaster parading as God's will..."

To this, many journalists and professors will claim that Islam was tremendously advanced scientifically and medically while Europe languished in the Dark Ages. However, as French historian Ernest Renan observed: "Science and philosophy flourished during the first half of the Middle Ages, but it was not by reason of Islam; it was in spite of Islam. Not a...philosopher or scholar escaped persecution...To give Islam the credit for...so many illustrious thinkers who passed half their life in prison, in forced hiding, in disgrace, whose books were burned and whose writings were suppressed by their theological authority, is as if one were to ascribe to the inquisition...a whole scientific development which it tried to prevent."

### **Plundering Progress**

What most of these propagandists for Islam choose to forget is that the Arab armies conquered the advanced Christian civilisations in North Africa and the Middle East. So, yes, by reason of plunder and occupation, the Islamic Empire was enriched and benefited immeasurably. But almost all of the scientific and technological advancements, and almost all of the hard work, were the work of Christian slaves and dhimmis.

We have not even looked here at the oppression of women in Islam, but there is a whole chapter on that in Slavery, Terrorism and Islam.

Faced as we are by the massive bloc of Islamic nations, and the vast petro-dollar funding of Islamic Propagation Centres, with their building of thousands of mosques and madrassas throughout Europe, Africa and the Americas, what hope is there for the future?

### **9-11**

First of all, the Scripture is clear: "*The desert tribes will bow before Him and His enemies will lick the dust... all kings will bow down to Him and all nations will serve Him.*" Psalm 72:9-11

That's the 9/11 of the Scriptures. Probably the most foolish thing Muslim radicals have ever done was attacking the financial heart of America with the terror attacks on the New York World Trade Centre and Washington with hijacked aircraft. Since September the 11th 2001, more critical books on Islam have been written than in previous centuries. We have begun to see the first cracks in the monolithic empire of Islam.

### **Tyrants Overthrown**

The Taliban, probably the most radical Islamic regime in the world, in Afghanistan, was toppled by US forces. For the first time free elections have been held in Afghanistan. Then Saddam Hussein's regime in Iraq, the military superpower of the Muslim world was defeated by the American and Allied forces in a matter of weeks. (The Americans have now also organised the first free elections in Iraq's history).

Also, in the first free elections in Nigerian history, a Christian president came to power. For 38 years Nigeria suffered under a succession of Islamic dictators. Nigeria hosted the Islam in Africa Conference and was recognised as an officially Islamic state by the World Islamic Organisation. Although Sharia law continues to be enforced in the 12 Northern provinces of Nigeria, with hundreds of churches having been burned, and thousands of Christians massacred, the population of Nigeria has plainly rejected Islamic rule and a Christian president is in power there for the first time.

### **More Defeats for Islam**

Next the National Islamic Front Government of Sudan which had waged Jihad against the Christian Black South, seeking to impose its policies of Islamisation and Arabisation, have now agreed to a cease-fire and signed a peace treaty. This peace treaty grants autonomy to the South, exempting them from Sharia law and recognising some religious freedom. Then, last year, Malawi, which had for ten years been ruled by a Muslim president, elected a Christian president.

## Shaking Foundations

Also, last year The Passion of the Christ film was shown throughout the Muslim world to overflowing theatres. Never before had any Christian medium impacted the lives of tens of millions of Muslims. Missionaries in the Middle East rejoiced that more people had seen The Passion in a single day in their city than they had been able to show the Jesus film in the previous four years of full-time missionary work! While the Jesus film was illegal and could only be shown secretly, at great risk, The Passion was being openly screened in the shopping mall cinemas! This, taken along with the phenomenal response to SAT-7, a Christian mission broadcasting Gospel programmes in Arabic throughout the Middle East, is also unprecedented.

Then we should mention the Cedar Revolution in Lebanon, and Libya's sudden renouncing of terrorism and seeking to co-operate with the USA. Taken together with the facts that: there are more missionaries focused on the Muslim world today than ever before in history, more books written on Islam from a Christian perspective than ever before, and there is also more prayer focused on the Muslim world than ever before. All of these factors considered together represent a series of seismic events shaking the very foundations of Islam.

## The Threat of Freedom

Islam cannot survive freedom. The Quran cannot survive intense scrutiny and critical investigation. In this technological age, Islam's days are numbered. Although they can hijack Western technology to use against the West, the foundations of Islam are rotten to the core and cannot stand.

The Scriptures declare: *“At the Name of Jesus every knee will bow...every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord...”* Philippians 2:10-11.

The day will come when the earth will be as full of the knowledge of the glory of the Lord as the seas are full of water (Habakkuk 2:14).

Yet it is also true that “My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge” (Hosea 4:6). There is a tremendous ignorance of Islam and most Christians are failing to evangelise their Muslim neighbours. That is why this book, Slavery, Terrorism and Islam is needed at this time. We need to understand Islam and we need to evangelise Muslims.

*“The harvest is plentiful, but the workers are few. Ask the Lord of the harvest therefore to send out workers into His harvest field.”* Matthew 9:39

Frontline Fellowship's new book: ***Slavery, Terrorism and Islam - The Historical Roots and Contemporary Threat*** sets the record straight, with chapters on “Muhammad, the Caliphas and Jihad”, “The Oppression of Women in Islam”, “The Sources of Islam”, “The Scourge of Slavery - The Rest of the Story.” With 110 pictures and 12 maps and charts, this book is well illustrated. It consists of 12 chapters and 9 very helpful appendices, including demographic maps of the Spread of Islam, a Glossary to understand Islamic Terms, a comparison of Muslim Nations and Military Spending versus their National Prosperity, a chart on how Jihad works depending on the percentage of Muslims in the population and Guidelines for Effective Muslim Evangelism.

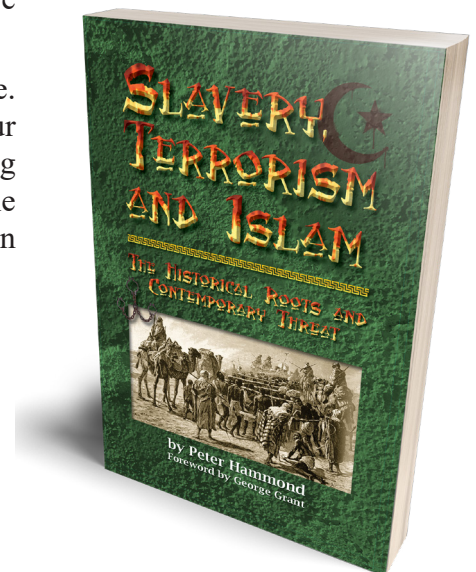
Please help us make this book better known and more widely available. And please put up the Pray for the Muslim World prayer map poster on your church or school notice board. Pray for the persecuted Christians suffering under Islam. Pray for the women suffering under Islam. And pray that the Church may respond to the threat of Islam with prayer and action - to win Muslims for Christ.

***“Go, therefore, and make disciples of all nations...”***

Matthew 28:19



Frontline Fellowship P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org





## Chapter 31

## How The GREATEST CENTURY of MISSIONS was DERAILED Into The WORST CENTURY of PERSECUTION



### A Tale of Two Conferences

The Father of modern Missions, William Carey, was a man ahead of his time. In 1810, he proposed a World Missions Conference and he suggested Cape Town as the ideal venue! It was 100 years later, in 1910, that the first World Missions Conference was held, in Edinburgh. Two hundred years after William Carey had proposed it, Cape Town hosted the Third Lausanne Conference on World Evangelism, October 2010.

### Cape Town 2010

It was a tremendous privilege to participate in this Congress on World Evangelisation. With over 4,200 invited participants from 198 countries and extending through global link sites to another 100,000 participants in 700 venues across 95 countries, Cape Town 2010 was the largest and most representative Missions Conference in history.

### Edinburgh 1910

Although I did not hear anyone in any of the plenary sessions refer to Edinburgh 1910, I had to conclude that surely it had been the intention to mark the centenary of the first World Missions Conference.

### William Carey's Vision

Similarly, although none of the speakers that I heard, nor any of the publications which the official organisers produced, referred to William Carey's vision of a World Missions Conference in 1810, it had to have been more than an extraordinary coincidence that here we were in Cape Town, at what William Carey had described as the uttermost part of the earth, at the junction between East and West, at the port that sat astride two oceans, the Atlantic and the Indian oceans, in the shadow of Table Mountain, to discuss the fulfilment of the Great Commission.

### The Father of Modern Missions

Dr. William Carey is rightly called the Father of Modern Missions. His book, *An Enquiry Into the Obligation of Christians to Use Means For the Conversion of the Heathen*, is credited as being the book that launched the Modern Missionary movement. In 1793, en-route to India, William Carey's ship docked in Cape Town and he was struck by the ideal setting of Cape Town, at the uttermost parts of the earth, a half way house between Europe and Asia, for a World Missions Conference, which he proposed be held in 1810! William Carey became the most prolific Bible translator in history, translating the complete Bible into 6 Asian languages and the New Testament and Gospels into another 29 languages. Since William Carey launched the greatest century of Missions, more than 80% of all Protestant Missionaries have been English speakers.



## Operation World

Another extraordinary coincidence was that the seventh edition of Operation World was launched at the Cape Town 2010 Congress. In its Foreword, Operation World acknowledges that the very first Missionary Prayer Guide to the world was written by William Carey in 1792: *An Enquiry Into the Obligation of Christians to Use Means For the Conversion of the Heathen*. This was the first Global Survey ever printed and the inspiration for the present phenomenon of [Operation World](#).

## Andrew Murray

Although it was not mentioned at the congress, [Dr. Andrew Murray](#), the Scottish South African minister, in 1900, wrote *The Key to the Missionary Problem* and challenged the Church to hold weeks of prayer for world Missions.

## The Whole Church Taking the World Gospel to the Whole World

As with previous Lausanne Congress, the focus was on The Whole Church Taking the Whole Gospel to the Whole World. However, I could not help wonder, why none of the speakers referred to the deliberations, presentations, conclusions and projections of the first World Missions Conference at Edinburgh, 1910? *“Without a vision, a people perish...”* Proverbs 29:18

## The Greatest Century of Missions

The 19<sup>th</sup> century was the greatest century of Missionary advance. It was a century of astounding inventions and of spectacular advances in technology. Many countries in Europe and overseas experienced dramatic spiritual Revivals. Christian Missionaries from Europe won whole tribes and nations to Christ, in the remotest regions of the globe. Christianity came to the beginning of the 20<sup>th</sup> century on a rising and apparently unstoppable tide. Christianity was gaining spectacular momentum, as Missionaries from Europe were Evangelising and discipling virtually every tribe and nation.

## Flourishing Faith and Freedom

The Protestant Faith had far outstripped the Catholic and Orthodox branches in missionary activity, vitality and initiative. From being confined almost entirely to North Western Europe, the British Isles and a narrow strip on the Eastern seaboard of North America and with a very small outpost at the Cape of Good Hope, the Protestant Faith in the 19<sup>th</sup> century had become a truly international Faith. It was the dominant Faith of the most productive, powerful and prosperous nations in both the Northern and Southern hemispheres. Amidst irrepressible optimism, many were openly speaking of the beginning of the Biblical Millennium on earth.

## Christians Dominated the World

In 1910, Christian nations ruled virtually the whole world. With the exception of China, Japan and the declining Ottoman Empire, the globe was dominated by Christian powers, especially Protestant Great Britain, Germany and the United States.

## A Century of Peace and Progress

Following the Battle of Waterloo and the defeat of the French Revolutionary and Napoleonic Wars, the Congress of Vienna had ushered in a century of comparative peace, astounding increases in population and unprecedented increases in productivity and standards of living. The 19<sup>th</sup> century had been a century of astounding achievements, growth and expansion. By 1910, the world was being led by people who had traditionally been known as Christian.

## Anticipating the Fulfilment of the Great Commission

At the first World Missions Congress in Edinburgh in 1910, delegates were anticipating the extinction of all false religions by 1960. The consensus of the speakers at Edinburgh 1910, was that every tribe and nation will have been thoroughly Evangelised and disciplined by 1960. They were anticipating the fulfilment of the Great Commission and the beginning of the Biblical Millennium on earth - before the end of the 20<sup>th</sup> century!

## Retreat from Victory

No one in 1910 could have anticipated the wholesale abandonment of entire nations to communism, to false religions and heathenism. Nor would any have predicted that the Church would retreat from victory to such an extent that they would even be questioning the existence of the devil, or hell, or reinterpreting marriage to include that which God in the Bible describes as perversion and an abomination.

## When the Church Fails to Be Salt and Light

The devastating and far reaching results of Western Europe's retreat from victory and of Christians withdrawal from impacting society, is clearly seen in the shocking statistics of heathen nations which by now should have been thoroughly Evangelised and disciplined. That is, if Christians in Europe and America had not been so busy bombing cities and killing millions of fellow Christians in the First and Second World Wars.



### **Return to Paganism**

The Missionary leaders who gathered in Edinburgh, 1910, would never have believed that by 2010, Europe would have become mostly secular and that the countries at that time that were being evangelised, civilised and disciplined, would have, in so many cases, returned to such pagan savagery and Islamic Jihad.

### **The Great Civil War of the West**

What no one at the 1910 Conference could have envisaged was the devastating impact of two World Wars on the heartland of the Church and of Mission sending agencies. The Great War wiped out millions and at the end of it, Europe was no longer the greatest economic, political and spiritual power on earth. Instead of disciplining the world, Christians allowed themselves to be manipulated into devastating one another's countries.

### **One Hundred Years Later**

This year, 2017, marks the 103<sup>rd</sup> anniversary of the outbreak of the greatest catastrophe in the history of civilisation, World War One. Prior to 1914, Christian nations ruled the world. The 19<sup>th</sup> century was the greatest century of Missions. Europe was succeeding in bringing the Gospel of Christ, literacy, civilisation and the rule of law to even the most remote and primitive parts of the globe. However, after two world wars, Europe went from being a majority church-going population to a spiritual wasteland, where only small percentages of each nation still attended church.

### **Filling the Vacuum**

The vacuum left by Europe abandoning Africa in de-colonisation was quickly filled during the Cold War by the Soviet Union and Red China with virulent communism and anti-Christian atheism.

### **The Guns of August**

The Christian era of bold Missionary expansion came to an abrupt end as the guns of August 1914, erupted. The great European countries which had been the heartland of Christendom and the source of most of the missionaries, devastated each others economies and annihilated millions of one another's young men, in what has to be recognised as the most tragic, senseless and counter-productive conflict in history.

### **Continental Suicide**

Before the First World War, no continent had ever been as powerful as Europe. There was no hint of any possible challenge to British dominance of the world. 1914 marks a far more drastic turning point than 1815, or 1648, or any other of the watershed events of history. Nothing could have stopped the positive, onward march of Christianity worldwide, except that Christians were persuaded to kill one another so enthusiastically and so efficiently. Far more devastating than the actual numbers of people killed, crippled, or severely injured, was the damage to the spiritual life of Europe and the world. The 19<sup>th</sup> century was the greatest century of Missions, but the 20<sup>th</sup> century became the worst century of persecution.

### **Refocusing on What Ultimately Matters**

It is absolutely essential that Christians learn the lessons of history and rediscover our purpose as God's people, to refocus on the fulfilment of the Great Commission, to make disciples of all nations, teaching obedience to all things that the Lord has commanded. The main thing is to keep the main thing the main thing. Our purpose on earth is to fulfil the Great Commission of our Lord Jesus Christ.

*"Therefore we also, since we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight and the sin which so easily ensnares us and let us run with endurance the race that is set before us, looking unto Jesus, the Author and finisher of our Faith..."* Hebrews 12:1-2

Dr. Peter Hammond

See also related articles:

[Assassination in Sarajevo](#)

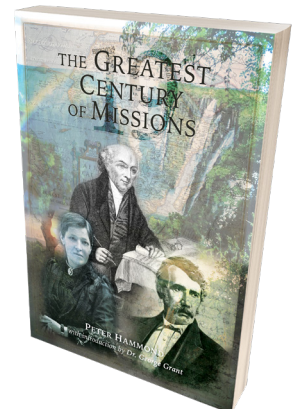
[Surprising Facts About the First World War](#)

[Britain and Germany - The Best of Enemies](#)

[Brest-Litovsk and the Present Day Boundaries of Eastern Europe](#)

[How Propaganda Changes Perceptions and People](#)

[The Greatest Killer](#)



**Frontline Fellowship** P O Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021 689 4480  
admin@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org www.ReformationSA.org

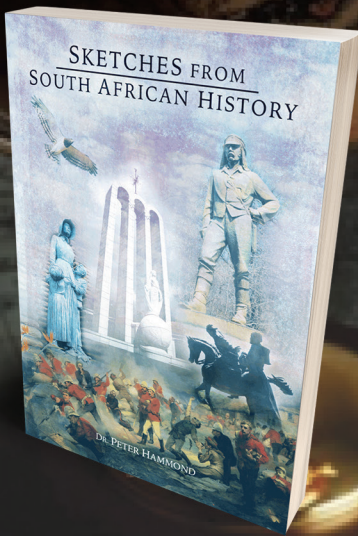
APPENDIX  
**RECOMMENDED HISTORY FILMS**

- Ben Hur** - 1960, starring Charlton Heston. One of the greatest films ever. Powerful depiction of the clash of the humanist state with the Christian Faith in the 1<sup>st</sup> century AD.
- The Fall of the Roman Empire** - 1964, starring Stephen Boyd, Alec Guinness, James Mason and Christopher Plummer on the disastrous events which led to the collapse of Rome.
- Becket** - 1964, starring Richard Burton and Peter O'Toole on the clash between church and state in the 12<sup>th</sup> century.
- The Agony and the Ecstasy** - 1965, starring Charlton Heston and Rex Harrison on Michelangelo's conflict with pope Julius II over the painting of the Sistine Chapel in the early 16<sup>th</sup> Century.
- Joan of Arc** - 1948, starring Ingrid Bergman, as the inspiring French heroine who changed history, by inspiring her people to resist foreign occupation (Early 15<sup>th</sup> century).
- Martin Luther** - 1953, starring Niall MacGinnis. An excellent 1950's Black and White award winning film which has Theological depth and historic accuracy (16<sup>th</sup> century).
- Luther** - 2003, starring Joseph Fiennes. A fast moving big budget (US\$100 million) epic on the Great Reformer. An inspiring introduction to the Reformer but shallow and filled with anachronism and takes a lot of liberties with the facts of history.
- God's Outlaw - The Story of William Tyndale** - 1986, starring Roger Rees. A drama on the English Bible Translator, Reformer and Martyr who gave his life that we could have the Bible in English (16<sup>th</sup> century).
- Cromwell** - 1970, starring Richard Harris and Alec Guinness, a tremendous epic on the English Civil War and Puritan general Oliver Cromwell, Lord Protector of England. Invaluable insights to 17<sup>th</sup> century England.
- A Tale of Two Cities** - 1935, starring Ronald Colman and Donald Woods. Based on Charles Dickens' 1859 classic historic novel. A powerful contrast between English Christianity and French Revolution Humanism.
- Waterloo** - 1970, starring Rod Steiger and Christopher Plummer. One of the greatest war films ever made of one of the most important battles ever fought (1815).
- Amistad** - 1997, starring Anthony Hopkins and Morgan Freeman on the 19<sup>th</sup> century slave trade.
- Florence Nightingale** - 1985, starring Claire Bloom and Timothy Dalton. Inspiring introduction to the Lady with the Lamp who launched modern nursing during the Crimean War (1854 - 1856).
- God and Generals** - 2003, starring Jeff Daniels and Robert Duvall on the American War between the States. Honest and historically accurate (1861 - 1863).
- Zulu Dawn** - 1978, starring Peter O'Toole and Burt Lancaster provides invaluable insights to the Anglo Zulu War of 1879 and the battle of Isandlwana.
- War and Peace** - 1956, Leo Tolstoy's literary masterpiece faithfully brought to the big screen depicting Russia during the Napoleonic Wars and the invasion by Napoleon in 1812. Starring Audrey Hepburn, Henry Fonda and Mel Ferrer.
- Nicholas and Alexandra** - 1971, starring Michael Jayston and Janet Suzman on the Bolshevik Revolution and the last Czar of Russia. Mostly true to history. Some disturbing scenes. Parental guidance advised (1904 - 1918).
- Joyeux Noel** - 2005 war drama depicts the Christmas Truce of 1914 during the First World War.
- Amazing Grace** - 2006, starring Ioan Gruffudd. A big budget epic on William Wilberforce's parliamentary battles to end the slave trade (End of the 18<sup>th</sup> century).
- Bitter Harvest** - 2017, starring Max Irons in a romantic action drama highlighting the Holodomor famine that killed millions of Ukrainians under Stalin's communist land reform Dekulakisation campaign in the 1930s. Essential viewing to understand communism. Parental Guidance advised.
- A Bridge Too Far** - 1977, epic war film on Operation Market Garden - the largest airborne operation in history. 35,000 Allied airborne troops parachuted into the Netherlands led to some of the most fierce battles of the Western Front in 1944. Starring Anthony Hopkins, Sean Connery, Gene Hackman, Hardy Kruger, Maximilian Schell and Laurence Olivier. One of the most authentic war films ever produced.
- The Great Raid** - 2005 war drama about the military raid in 1945 by US Rangers to free Prisoners of War in the Philippines. One of the very few war films which depicts the reality of what both prisoners and soldiers actually faced in that conflict. Starring Joseph Fiennes and James Franco.
- Africa Addio** - 1966, an unflinching book at the savage lawlessness that accompanied decolonisation in Africa, including the Mau Mau of Kenya and the Simbas in the Congo. Not for the sensitive viewer, this film documents the massacres and brutality of revolutionaries in Africa.
- "How Should We Then Live?"** - 1977, by Francis Schaeffer, monumentally important Worldview overview from the time of the Romans through to our present time.

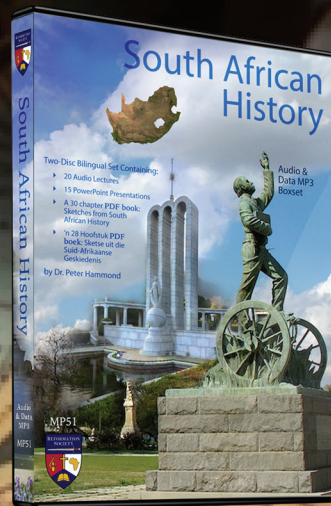


# SOUTH AFRICAN HISTORY

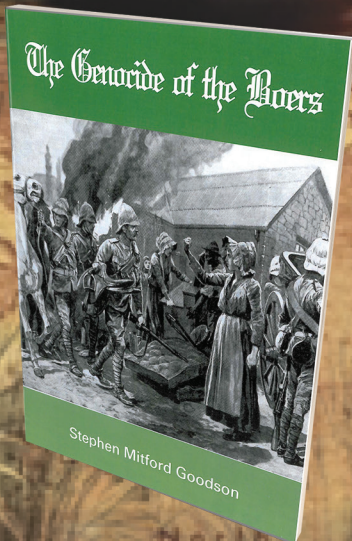
UNDERSTAND THE TIMES. LEARN FROM EXAMPLES OF EXCELLENCE



An easy to read history book, developed over many years of travel, research, investigation, presentations and interactions with key-players in our country's history. 208 Pages & 185 pictures. **R98\***

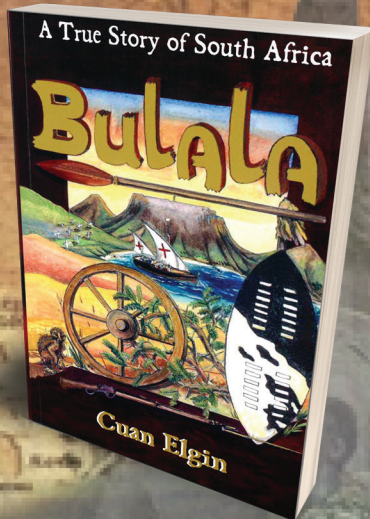


Contains 20 Audio lectures, 15 PowerPoints, 30 Chapter PDF Sketches from South African History book and 28 chapter PDF Sketse uit die Suid-Afrikaanse Geskiedenis book. **R180\***



By Stephen Mitford Goodson  
A history book on a very neglected part of South African History. This book is rich with illustrations.

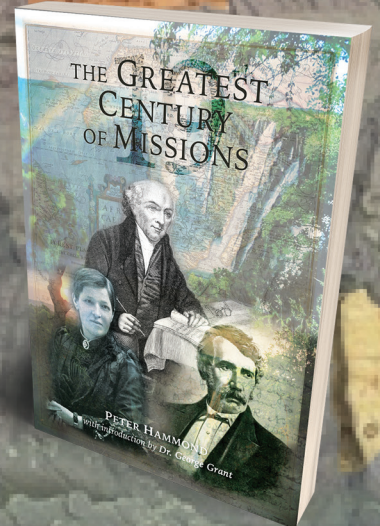
24 pages & 43 pictures & maps  
**R50\***



A historical novel about real people, incidents and events – the taming of a harsh, yet beautiful land.

392 Pages

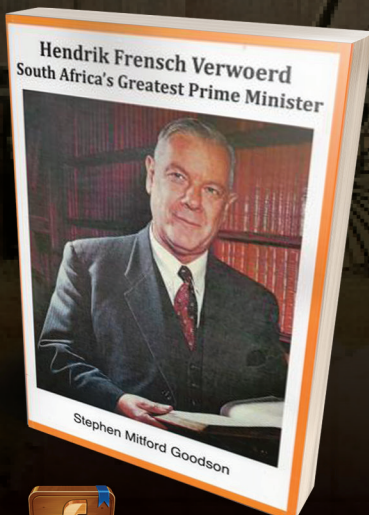
**R100\***



A treasure trove of achievements during the most momentous era of Christian advance.

224 Pages with over 190 pictures, photographs, & maps

**R98\***

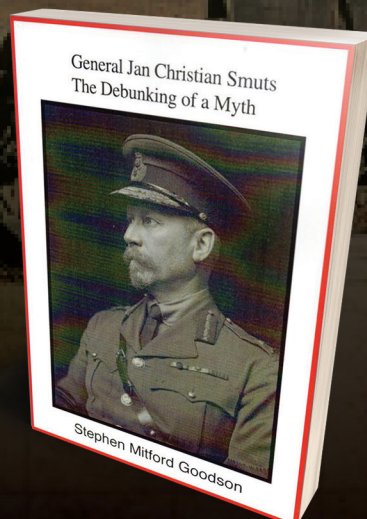


By Stephen Mitford Goodson  
The story of Dr. Verwoerd, who was called *Rapula* by the Black people – the rainmaker who brings the good things in life.

144 pages & 28 pictures.

**R150\***

\* prices exclude postage



By Stephen Mitford Goodson  
The story why previous generations saw General Smuts as a traitor.

90 pages  
28 pictures

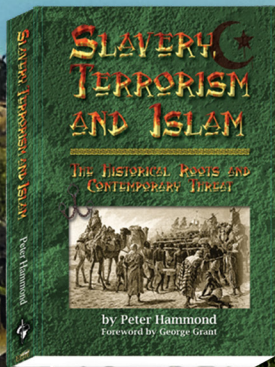
**R100\***



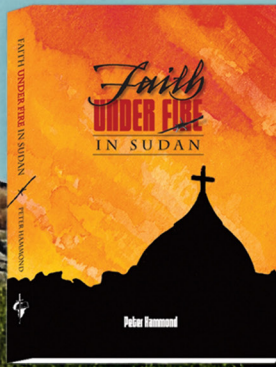


# FRONTLINE RESOURCES

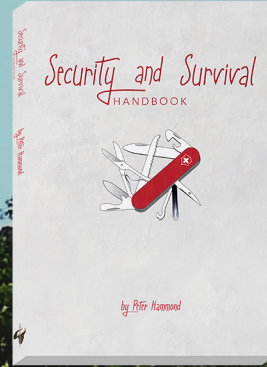
EVANGELISING IN WAR ZONES & SERVING THE PERSECUTED



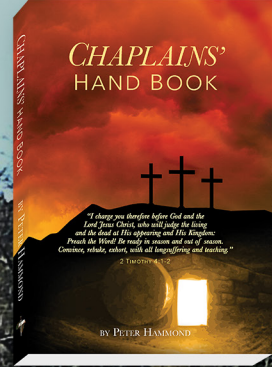
\* 288 Pages  
200 Pictures  
**R105**



\* 320 Pages, 205 Pictures  
Hard Cover **R175**  
Soft Cover **R105**



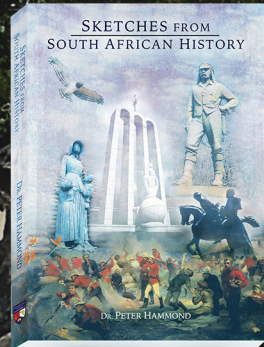
128 Pages  
& 32 pictures  
**R88**



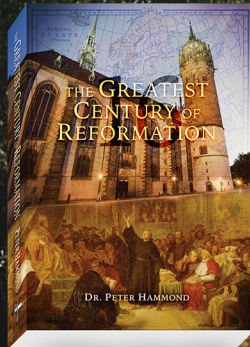
144 Pages  
**R75**

## HISTORY BOOKS

Both Books for **R200**



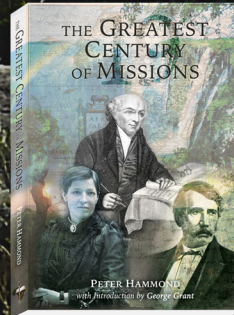
\* 220 Pages, 185  
Pictures  
**R98\***



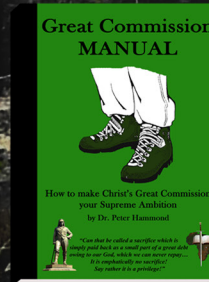
288 Pages, Over 200  
Pictures & Maps  
**R130**

## GREAT COMMISSION KIT

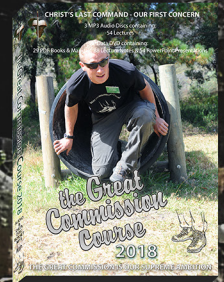
Book, Manual & Audio MP3 Boxset for **R345**



224 Pages, 200 Pictures  
**R98**



196 Pages  
(Large Format)  
**R75**



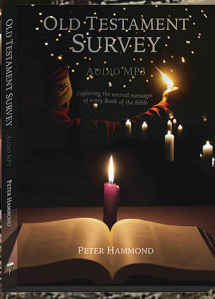
3 MP3 Audio Discs containing:  
54 Lectures and a  
Data DVD containing:  
88 Lecture Notes,  
54 PowerPoints and  
29 PDF Books & Manuals  
**R220**

## BIBLE TEACHING COMBO

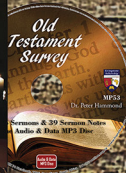
Both book and Audio MP3 **R180**



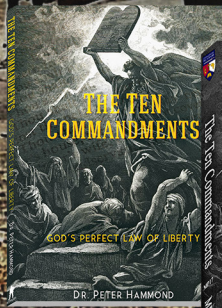
288 Pages  
27 Pictures, Maps  
& Charts  
**R105**



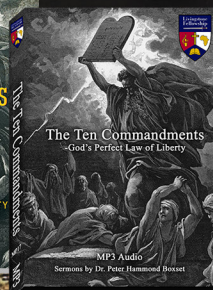
Audio and Data MP3  
42 Messages  
**R98**



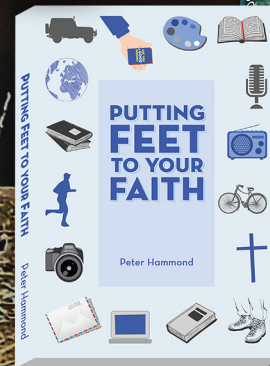
## THE TEN COMMANDMENTS Series **R150**



152 Pages  
15 Pictures  
**R78**

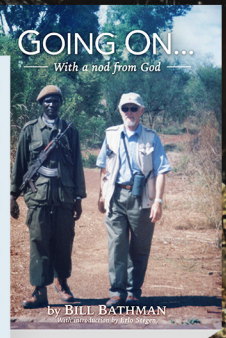


Audio and Data MP3  
12 Audio Messages  
PowerPoint & PDF Book  
**R98**



\* 152 Pages  
**R95**

\* Also available in E-book



\* 320 Pages  
156 Pictures  
**R175**

## Christian Liberty Books

Resources for Reformation and Revival

PO Box 358 Howard Place 7450 Pinelands Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021 689 7478 Fax: 086 551 7490

admin@christianlibertybooks.co.za

www.christianlibertybooks.co.za



## FRONTLINE FELLOWSHIP

PO BOX 74 NEWLANDS 7725

CAPE TOWN SOUTH AFRICA

Tel: +27 21 689 4480 Fax: +27 21 685 5884

admin@frontline.org.za

www.FrontlineMissionSA.org